













CHAPTERS ON  
ENGLISH METRE

BY

JOSEPH B. MAYOR, M.A.

LONDON.  
C J. CLAY AND SONS,  
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE.  
1886

[*All Rights reserved*]

**Cambridge :**

PRINTED BY C. J. CLAY, M.A. AND SONS,  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

## PREFACE.

My attention was first drawn to the exact study of English prosody many years ago in lecturing on Shakespeare to classes both male and female. As a rule I found those who attended the classes devoid of any but the vaguest idea of metre; and I knew of no book which I could recommend to them as giving an entirely satisfactory account of the matter, the books of the highest authority seeming to me to start from assumptions which were inconsistent with the practice of English poets from the time of Shakespeare downwards. I endeavoured to point out these inconsistencies and, at the same time, to give the outline of what I thought to be a truer system, in three papers, which were read before the London Philological Society between the years 1874 and 1877. The substance of those papers, greatly modified and expanded, appears in the chapters which follow, numbered I. to V. VII. X.; the remaining chapters are altogether new.

My own views have naturally undergone some change in the interval which has elapsed since the first paper was written. For instance, I have now no doubt, as I have said in p. 189, that we must recognize the substitution of tribrachs for iambs in English blank verse, a point which was still an open question to me when pp. 74 and 79 were written. I am now less disposed to agree with Dr Abbott in his attempt to explain away Shakespeare's trisyllabic feet by the process of slurring, than I was when I wrote my paper on *Macbeth* (pp. 158 foll.). On the other hand, I have given in p. 178 the reasons which have finally decided me to adopt Dr Abbott's, rather than Mr A. J. Ellis's view, in reference to the feminine caesura, of which I had spoken doubtfully in my earlier paper. As far as I know, these are the only points in which any difference of view will be found; should there be any others, a reference to the Index

will at once enable the reader to compare together all that is said on any given subject.

There is another matter on which I should like to add a word to what is stated in the text. Prof. H. Sidgwick, who has most kindly looked over some of the proof-sheets, suggests, in reference to the chapter on Metrical Metamorphosis, that it would be well to make it more clear to the reader, that it is not a mere verbal question, whether, for instance, a line should be called an iambic with initial truncation or a trochaic with final truncation; and asks me how I would propose to answer "the real and interesting aesthetic question, whether the type (i.e. the normal line) so far predominates in the reader's mind, that he feels the particular line (which departs from the normal line) rather as a variant than as a distinct change of type." To this I would reply (1) that my chief aim will be accomplished, if I can get my readers to observe the different metrical effects of the lines which they read, and to describe them in clear and definite terms, and that this will not be interfered with, even though we should allow of alternative expressions for the same fact; (2) that a certain number of variants have now become established, as it were, by universal consent, such as the feminine iambic and truncated trochaic; (3) that when a question arises about the scansion of a line which cannot be referred to any such recognized subclass, it is not ordinarily a matter of indifference which of two possible explanations we shall adopt, but that we have first to compare such a line with the other lines of the poem in which it occurs, and see whether we can discover any similar irregularities, as for instance in regard to Milton's use of the double trochee (p. 40); and must reject any theory which will not suit all such irregular lines; as in p. 87 it is shown, in regard to Coleridge's variations of the 4-foot iambic, that the trochaic explanation will not apply to the line

Is the night chilly and dark;

(4) that, in cases where nothing can be absolutely decided from a comparison of the rest of the poem or of other similar poems, the choice between two possible explanations of a verse must

in the last resort rest with the educated taste of the reader. It is not enough simply that the ear should be naturally sensitive to the harmonies of sound; the ear must have been accustomed to the particular metre or rhythm, or it will not be able to appreciate it rightly. No doubt it is possible that, even so, differently constituted minds and ears may be differently affected by the same break or change in the rhythm. In such a case I should be inclined to say with Horne Tooke 'truth is what each men troweth'; the accurate explanation will be that which accurately expresses each man's own feeling of the rhythm of the line.

I have given my book the title of *Chapters on Metre* in order to show that it makes no pretence to completeness. I have not attempted to deal, otherwise than incidentally, either with the aesthetic or the historic side of metrical investigation. I have barely touched on such matters as alliteration and rhyme: I have not ventured to pronounce an opinion as to the origin and early history of our metres. What I have endeavoured to do is to ascertain by a process of induction the more general laws of our modern metre, and to test the results on a variety of instances. I wish very much that some competent scholar would take up that historical side of the question which I have left untouched. To mention only one part of it, I do not know where to find a really careful investigation of the growth of accentual Latin verse. It would have been admirably done by the ever-to-be-lamented Munro, if he had chosen to turn his attention to it. I remember hearing long ago a paper read by him before the Cambridge Philosophical Society, in which he drew attention to the importance of the accent as colouring the rhythm even of the quantitative verse of the Augustan age. Thus he contrasted the rude sing-song of the soldiers at Caesar's triumph,

*Ecce Caesar nunc triumphat qui subegit Gallias,*

where the verbal accent corresponds throughout with the stress of the quantitative metre, and such a line as that of Virgil,

*Itáliam fáto prófugus Lavinia venit,*

where the poet studiously opposes the accent to the metre.

What may be the earliest specimen of pure accentual verse in Latin I am unable to say. We are told by Christ (*Metrik der Griechen und Römer*, p. 402) that Ritschl considered the mill-song of the Lesbian women (ἄλει, μύλα, ἄλει) to be an early example of accentual metre in Greek. In Latin the *Instructiones* of the barbarous Commodianus (flourished about the middle of the third century) is usually named as the first specimen of accentual verse, but his metre is almost as indifferent to accent as it is to quantity. The example quoted by Dr Donaldson in his Latin Grammar is a poem on two of the Diocletian martyrs commencing

*Dúae quaedam réferuntur Rómae natae féminae.*

Whatever may be the date of the earliest existing specimen, there can be no doubt that the feeling for quantity had long before died out among all but the learned few, and that such verses for instance as the irregular Phalaecians addressed to Alexander Severus (Lamprid. c. 38) would be ordinarily read as accentual iambics corresponding to the hendecasyllabic of modern Italian, our own 5-foot feminine.

*Pulchrum | quod vídes es|se nos|trum re|gem  
Quem Sy|rum tetulit | propa|go pul|chrum,  
Vena|tus fa|cít et | lepus | come|sus  
De quo | contin|uum | capít | lepo|rem.*

Hence I am unable to place implicit confidence in the assertion of Zarncke, that the origin of this metre cannot be traced further back than the Romance poets<sup>1</sup>.

In conclusion I have to return my hearty thanks to Mr A. J. Ellis for allowing me to make free use of various papers on metre, to Dr Furnivall and Prof. Paul Meyer of Paris for much helpful information, and to Mr Roby and Prof. Sidgwick for valuable criticisms and suggestions.

<sup>1</sup> 'Der fünffüßige Iambus, als Zehnsilbler oder Eilfsilbler erscheinend, ist nicht vom Alterthume uns überliefert...Als selbstständiger Rhythmus erscheint der Vers nirgends (i. e. neither in Latin nor in Greek),' p. 3. See below Postscript, p. 197.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

### *Introduction.*

A scientific treatment of the subject of metre is possible and is desirable. Scientific analysis must be kept apart from historical research and aesthetical criticism. Distinction between prose and verse. Use of classical terms in reference to English metre defended. Scansion by feet the basis of scientific analysis. Principles of metrical classification. Questions which the metrist has to answer . . . .	PAGE 1—11
---	--------------

## CHAPTER II.

### *Antiquarian A-priorism.*

Dr Guest's metrical system is based on the assumption that our modern verse should conform to the laws of Anglo-Saxon metre. His normal iambic line, with its two sections and its fixed pauses, is not recognized by our greatest poets, who place their stops where they like, and substitute freely trochees, pyrrhics, spondees and trisyllabic feet for the iamb. Dr Guest's theory compels him to condemn what is universally approved and approve what is universally condemned. . . .	12—33
---	-------

## CHAPTER III.

### *Logical A-priorism.*

Dr Abbott starts with the true normal line, but is slow to see how it is modified and varied in the practice of the poets. Through his unwillingness to admit that other feet can be substituted for the iamb he is driven to disyllabize monosyllables, to lay stress on unaccented syllables, and to allow of extra-metrical syllables in almost any part of the line . . . . .	34—46
---	-------

## APPENDIX.

Mr H. Nicol and Prof. Paul Meyer on the Old French decasyllabic metre. . . . .	46—48
--	-------



## CHAPTER IV.

*Aesthetic Intuitivism.*

	PAGE
Mr J. A. Symonds despairs of metrical analysis and would substitute an aesthetic analysis in its place. His various inconsistencies. His challenge to scan certain lines accepted . . . . .	49—56

## CHAPTER V.

*Natural or a-posteriori system.*

Mr A. J. Ellis recognizes that the normal heroic line is rare in practice; that the number of syllables is often greater than ten, and the number of accents generally less, but sometimes more, than five. The stress denoted by the accent is not always the same. Illustrations from Milton and Byron. For the purpose of full analysis Mr Ellis distinguishes nine degrees of force, length, pitch, weight, and silence, giving altogether forty-five varieties of stress, and exemplifies these in some verses of his own. Limit of variation from the normal weak-strong (iambic) foot. Further illustrations from Milton. Criticisms on Mr Ellis' remarks, especially in reference to the limit of substitution of other feet for the iamb. Mr Masson finds pyrrhic, trochee, spondee, anapaest, dactyl, tribrach, cretic, amphibrach, antibacchius in Milton. His instances of the last four disputed. Mr Keightley on Milton's obligations to Italian verse, especially as regards certain uses of the trochee, and the hypermetrical syllable at the caesura . . . . .	57—80
--	-------

## CHAPTER VI.

*Metrical Metamorphosis.*

Difficulty of determining the metre of separate lines apart from the poems to which they belong. This arises partly from substitution of one foot for another, partly from the addition of a hypermetrical syllable, at the end in the case of iambic and anapaestic metres, at the beginning in the case of trochaic and dactylic; partly from initial truncation in iambic and anapaestic, and from final truncation in trochaic and dactylic metres. More rarely we find examples of internal truncation. It is owing to this principle of metamorphosis that four-foot iambic and trochaic metres so readily pass into one another, and that anapaestic lines are sometimes mistaken for amphibrachic. Metres may also be disguised by an unmetrical division of the lines. Symbols used for scansion . . . . .	81—98
---	-------

## CHAPTER VII.

<i>Naming and classification of Metres. Illustrations from Tennyson.</i>
Examples of trochaic verses, truncated, complete, and hypermetrical, varying in length from two to eight feet. Substitution of iambs or

	PAGE
dactyls for trochees. How the different trochaic lines are combined in poems. Iambic metres, truncated, complete, and hypermetrical, varying in length from two to seven feet. Substitution of trochee, anapaest, and dactyl for iamb. How the different iambic lines are combined in poems. Anapaestic metres, truncated, complete, and hypermetrical, varying in length from one foot to eight feet. Verses divided into sections with occasional internal truncation. Substitution of iamb for anapaest. How the different anapaestic lines are combined in poems. Difficulty of distinguishing between truncated anapaestic and truncated dactylic. Dactylic metres rare. Poems in mixed metres, regular or irregular; e.g. trochaic and iambic, iambic and anapaestic, trochaic and dactylic. Classical metres, hendecasyllabic and alcaic . . .	99—123

## CHAPTER VIII.

*Naming and Classification of Metres. Illustrations from  
the Hymn-book.*

Explanation of the metrical terminology of the Hymn-book. Iambic stanzas of four lines classed according to the length of the lines, with special varieties noted. Iambic stanzas of more than four lines similarly classed. Trochaic, dactylic, and anapaestic stanzas similarly divided and classed. Mixed metres: iambic and trochaic, iambic and dactylic, iambic and anapaestic, trochaic and dactylic, trochaic and anapaestic. A riddle . . . . .	124—134
--	---------

## CHAPTER IX.

*Blank Verse of Surrey and Marlowe.*

Harshness of Surrey's rhythm. He freely admits a trochee or anapaest in any foot, and has often two trochees or anapaests in succession. His commonest pause is after the 4th syllable, but we also find a pause after the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 9th syllables, and he not unfrequently omits either the middle or final pause or both. Pauses which divide the feet have a harsh effect when the preceding syllable is accented. Uses feminine ending, broken lines and Alexandrines. Gascoyne's rule as to iambic metre. Marlowe more regular in accentuation than Surrey. Sometimes begins with a monosyllabic foot. Unusual pronunciation of proper names. Corrupt lines. He occasionally disyllabizes monosyllables, especially those which contain an <i>r</i> or <i>l</i> . Anapaests are common in any part of the line. Dactyls occur in the 1st and 4th feet. Trochees are common in the 1st foot, and in the 2nd and 3rd after a stop, but otherwise rarer than in Surrey. His pauses are usually at the end of the line and after the 4th or 6th syllable, but he also has the harsh dividing pause after an inverted accent . . . . .	138—145
--	---------

## CHAPTER X.

*Shakespeare's Blank Verse. Macbeth.*

PAGE

Syllabic variation of metre by way of defect, in fragmentary and defective lines. Instances of the former in rapid dialogue, and also at the beginning, middle, and end of longer speeches. The latter may be explained by change of pronunciation, or by a significant pause, or by intentional lengthening of a long syllable. Syllabic variation by way of excess, in extra-metrical syllables at the end of the line or after the caesura, or by superfluous syllables, sometimes elided or slurred, sometimes forming trisyllabic feet, or Alexandrine verses. Accentual variation by substitution of pyrrhic, spondee or trochee. Mr Ellis refuses to admit the Common Section, seeing no reason for completing Shakespeare's short lines. He considers that the recognition of the trisyllabic foot renders unnecessary the assumption of slurring, as well as of an extra-metrical syllable in the middle of the line . . . 146—171

## CHAPTER XI.

*Shakespeare's Blank Verse. Hamlet.*

Examples of pyrrhic, spondee and trochee in all parts of the line. Feminine ending used more frequently in the less poetical passages. The extra syllable is often a monosyllable. The admission of the trisyllabic foot will not account for all the cases of feminine caesura. Anapaests are found in all the feet, dactyls rarely except in the first. Doubt as to the existence of Alexandrines in Hamlet. Notes on defective and fragmentary lines . . . 172—183

## CHAPTER XII.

*Modern Blank Verse. Tennyson and Browning.*

Comparison of Milton, Tennyson and Browning in regard to the position of the pauses, the use of the feminine ending, and the substitution of other feet for the iamb. A favourite rhythm of Tennyson's is that in which the ending of the words does not correspond with the ending of the feet. Double trochee occurs occasionally in Tennyson and often in Browning. Examples of trisyllabic feet, tribrach as well as anapaest and dactyl. Peculiar effect of pause after inverted accent. Appropriateness of rhythm to the thought. Unstopped lines. Other examples of unusual rhythm. Excellences and defects of Browning's rhythm . . . 184—196

*Postscript.*

Abstract of Zarncke's essay on the 5-foot iambus of Lessing and Schiller . . . 197—202

INDEX . . . 203—206

## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTORY.

\* THERE are persons to whom system generally is a bugbear, and to whom systems of prosody are especially distasteful. 'The object of rhythm and metre,' they argue, 'is to please the ear. If they fail to do this, they fail of their object, and nothing is gained by showing that they are conformable to certain rules of grammarians. The final authority rests, not with the grammarian, but with those for whom the poet sings.' It may be answered that, just in the same way, the primary object of the musician and painter is to afford pleasure to the eye and ear. If they fail in this, they too fail in their object. But none will deny the importance of theory and rules in these branches of art, both for training the artist in the means by which he may attain his end, and for educating the hearer and spectator to appreciate a higher and more refined order of beauty. Or we might take our illustration not from an art, but from a science, such as botany. The use of botany is to enable us to describe in exact and definite terms the different characteristics of plants, to arrange and classify all that is known about them, and to reduce the various phenomena to their simplest types and laws. So the use of prosody is to supply a technical language by which to describe each specimen of verse brought before us; to distinguish the different kinds of verse, to establish a type of each, by reference to which existing varieties may be compared, and finally to state the laws of composition which have been observed by those whom the world recognizes as poets. Then from this we may draw practical rules of art for the poet or the reader.

No doubt, when the subject matter of the science or art is one with which our affections are more or less intimately connected, there is a natural shrinking from what may appear to be a cold-blooded analysis of that which excites our admiration or love. At best, we think we can gain nothing by it. Like the speaker in 'Maud' we are inclined to say

a learned man  
May give it a clumsy name,  
Let him name it who can,  
Its beauty would be the same.

But we are moreover suspicious of any attempt to explain how it is that a poet produces his results. We prefer to accept the poem as a pure inspiration wakening up an answering inspiration in our own minds. We regard the use of analysis as a perfidious attempt to rob us of inspiration and leave us in its stead a studied expertness in certain tricks of art. But this is really a total misconception of what is aimed at in metrical analysis. It only deals with the outer vesture of poetry; it teaches us to look more closely at this, to notice its forms and colours and ornaments, just in the same way as a very slight knowledge of botany enables us to observe the distinguishing beauties of ferns or other plants. It may also go on to show how the inner spirit of poetry reveals itself in its outer vesture, how rhythm and metre correspond to varying moods of feeling and so on, but it makes no pretence to explain the creative inspiration of the poet; on the contrary it enlarges our idea of its operation and thus tends to enhance our admiration and delight, just as the teaching of botany or drawing not only quickens the eye for the external features of a landscape, but vastly increases the imaginative and emotional enjoyment of natural scenery.

Connected with this dislike to the application of scientific terms and methods to poetry, as injurious to its spirit and feeling, there is the dislike sometimes felt by persons of fine ear to the mechanical process of scanning. Partly they despair of explaining by rule, or representing by a scheme, the rich undulation of sound of which the ear is cognizant. This is an objection to which all science is liable. As Bacon says, "subtilitas

naturae subtilitatem argumentandi multis partibus superat." And partly there is an aristocratic confidence in their own poetic instinct, and a suspicion and contempt for knowledge slowly gained by training and effort. Yet, we all know, science the tortoise, quickly outstrips the hare, intuition. Singing by ear is no match for singing from notes. Refined aesthetic sense or tact may judge instinctively of the quality of this or that verse, as melodious or the opposite, but this tact passes away with the individual who possessed it. Science translates quality into a quantitative scale; rudely, it is true, at first; but each step gained is a gain for mankind at large, and forms an ever new vantage-ground for the investigations of each succeeding generation.

We may assume then that a scientific treatment of the subject of metre is possible and is desirable. The next question is, how far has this desirable end been already achieved? I shall endeavour to answer this in the following chapters by a careful examination of the metrical systems which possess the highest authority and are most in esteem at the present day; and in order to make my criticisms more generally intelligible, I shall commence with a brief sketch of what I hold to be the natural or truly scientific system.

A subject like prosody lends itself to three different kinds of treatment in consequence of its connexion with history on the one side and aesthetics on the other. One of the dangers which the prosodian or metrist has to guard against is the mixing up of these different methods of treatment. Thus Dr Guest in his *History of English Rhythms* sets before himself as his main object, to trace out the development of one rhythm or metre from another, and to exhibit the varieties of rhythm which characterize each poet and each period, a very interesting and important branch of inquiry. But this simple inquiry into matter of fact is rendered almost valueless by the arbitrary assumption that the greater part of the development of English metre has been illegitimate. The rule of verse laid down by our Anglo-Saxon ancestors is treated as a rule of faith, binding on their unfortunate successors to the end of time. No right of private judgment is allowed either to poets or to readers.

Verses, however pleasing to the modern ear, are denied to be metrical at all, or else twisted and mangled to suit the usage of five centuries ago; just as a modern sentence might be condemned as ungrammatical, because it could not be explained on antiquarian views of syntax. A confusion of a different kind is found in other metrical writers (of whom Mr J. A. Symonds may be taken as an example), who deprecate any attempt to name or count the feet in a verse, provided its rhythm satisfies their ear and is in harmony with their idea of the poet's feeling. No good can be done until we clear ourselves of these confusions. The first thing which the metrist should set himself to ascertain in regard to any verses submitted to him is the existing τί, the actual phenomenon; what is the normal line of the metre? how does each particular verse depart from this type? Then he may go on to investigate the ᾠδὴν, the melody and expressiveness of the verse, and the means by which these qualities are attained. And lastly he may investigate the πῶς, observe how any particular metre has come into existence, what metrical effects each poet has borrowed from others, and what he has added for himself.

Treating the subject thus from the purely scientific side, and deferring for the present all reference to historical or æsthetic considerations, I start with the two fundamental questions, What is the distinction between prose and verse? How are the different kinds of verse to be classified?

As regards the first, I suppose all would agree in saying that, in English, verse differed from prose in regularity of accentuation. Where the accent recurs in obedience to a definite law, there we have verse. And the kinds of verse are classified according to the intervals which separate the accents, whether an interval of one syllable or of two syllables, and according as the rhythm is ascending, i.e. passing from an unaccented to an accented syllable, or descending, i.e. passing from an accented to an unaccented syllable. We thus get the four simplest kinds of metres, ascending disyllabic, descending disyllabic, ascending trisyllabic, and descending trisyllabic: the metres commonly known as iambic, trochaic, anapaestic, dactylic.

Here I am aware that I enter on debated ground. Mr A. J. Ellis, in the course of his great work on English pronunciation, proposes to consider what light is thrown upon the pronunciation of Shakespeare's time by an examination of the rhymes, the accents, and the number of syllables admitted in his verse. He asserts that "the whole subject of English metres requires re-investigation on the basis of accent." "The old names of measures borrowed from Latin prosodists are entirely misleading, and the routine scansion with the accent on alternate syllables is known only to grammarians, having never been practised by poets."

There are three points here for discussion : Are the classical names to be given up? Is the routine scansion unknown to poets? Is it, in any case, of use in the interests of education and science? I cannot myself see that the use of the terms 'iambic,' etc., is misleading. No one imagines, that they imply that English metre rests on a quantitative basis. The notion of quantity altogether seems to me rather a puzzle to English people; they know what a long vowel is, but I doubt whether they would recognize a long syllable such as 'strength' where the vowel was short. Again, it cannot be denied that there is to the ear a strong resemblance between the rhythm of the English accentual, and the Greek quantitative iambic and trochaic, and it is certainly more convenient to speak of iambic than of ascending disyllabic. The only other way in which I could imagine the term misleading, would be if any one were to suppose that the rules of the Greek metre were applicable in the English; but this is so easily corrected that it hardly seems worth notice<sup>1</sup>.

As to the second point, whether the routine scansion has

\* <sup>1</sup> I find that Mr Ellis objects to the Classical nomenclature, rather in the interests of Classical, than of English metre. His remarks on the above passage are as follows. "It seems to me that the use of the classical names has arisen from our not understanding them, that is, not having the feeling for what they expressed,

and that it is essential to our comprehension of the classical metres to dissociate their terminology from that of modern metres which have nothing in common with them." For a fuller discussion he refers to his *Practical Hints on the Quantitative Pronunciation of Latin*.



ever been known to poets, i.e. whether poets have ever kept strictly to the metre in their practice, it surely cannot be denied that some of our poets, (Chaucer among them) have in some respects approached the routine scansion; but I am not concerned here either to maintain or to deny that they have done so. What I would affirm is that it is impossible for the routine scansion to die out as long as there are children and common people, and poetry which commends itself to them. And I would also venture to say that it *ought* not to die out as long as there are scientific men who will endeavour to bring clearness and precision into our notions about poetry as about other things. Routine scansion is the natural form of poetry to a child, as natural to it as the love of sweet things or bright colours: it is only through the routine scansion that its ear can be educated to appreciate in time a more varied and complex rhythm. No one who knows children can doubt this. If example is wanted, it may be found in Ruskin's *Praeterita*, p. 55, where the author speaks of a prolonged struggle between his childish self and his mother "concerning the accent of the *of* in the lines

Shall any following spring revive  
The ashes of the urn?

"I insisting partly in childish obstinacy, and partly in true instinct for rhythm (being wholly careless on the subject both of urns and their contents) on reciting it with an accented *of*. "It was not till after three weeks' labour that my mother got the accent lightened on the *of* and laid on the *ashes*, to her mind." But any parent may test it for himself in children who have a taste for poetry. Whatever effort may be made to teach them to observe the true verbal accents and the stops, and attend to the meaning and logic of the line, they will insist on singing it to a chant of their own, disregarding everything but the metrical accent, and are made quite unhappy if compelled to say or read it like prose. And, after all, is this not the right sense of the  $\mu\eta\mu\nu \delta\epsilon\iota\delta\epsilon$ , and 'arma cano,'? is it not the fact that the earliest recitation of poetry was really what we should consider a childish sing-song? This becomes still more probable when we remember that music and dancing

were frequent accompaniments of the earliest kinds of poetry, the effect of which would undoubtedly be to emphasize and regulate the beats or accents of the line; just as in church-singing now the verbal accent is ignored, if it is opposed to the general rhythmical character of the verse.

But independently of the natural instinct of children to scan, it seems to me that we need the division of the line into metrical feet as the simple basis of all description and comparison of metres. The foot is the unit which by repetition constitutes the line; the syllable is a mere fraction, and no index to the metre. On the other hand, to assume a larger unit, such as Dr Guest's *section* spoken of in the next chapter, or the double foot, the *μέτρον*, implied by the terms trimeter and tetrameter, is contrary to the feeling of English verse, and the latter is altogether unsuitable for the description of our heroic metre, which in its simplest form has five equal beats, and in no way suggests two wholes and a half. As regards the name 'foot,' for which Mr Ellis would substitute 'measure,' it seems to me a matter of little importance; 'measure' no doubt expresses its meaning more clearly than the metaphorical 'foot,' but the latter is in possession, while the former is generally understood in a wider and more abstract sense.

I am in favour then of the scanning by feet, on the ground that it is both natural and necessary, and also that it is scientific. I should further urge it in the interests of practical education. One good effect of the old plan of making all boys write Latin verses was to give men some idea of versification and rhythm, which women seldom have, unless gifted with specially good ears. It is probable that in time to come Latin verse writing will be less and less required, and it is at all events desirable that a purely English education should enable people to enter into and appreciate the beauties of English verse. For this purpose, boys and girls should be practised in observing how the mechanical pendulum swing of scansion is developed into the magnificent harmonies of Milton; they should be taught to notice and explain the difference in rhythm of Dryden and Pope, of Cowper and Wordsworth, of Keats and Shelley and Tennyson and Browning.

Having thus stated how far I disagree with what I believe to be Mr Ellis's meaning, I will state where I should go along with him. I altogether object to putting a poet into the bed of Procrustes. If the foundation of Milton's verse is, as I believe, the regular five-foot iambic, yet it seems to me absurd to say that we must therefore expect to find five regular iambs in every line. Again, I can sympathize with Mr Ellis in his objection to the classicists who would force upon us such terms as choriambic and proceleusmatic to explain the rhythm of Milton. I do not deny that the effect of his rhythm might sometimes be represented by such terms; but if we really imagine that by their use we shall be able to explain the music of his poetry, we are attempting an impossibility, to express in technical language the infinite variety of measured sound which a genius like Milton could draw out of the little five-stringed instrument on which he chose to play.

Returning now to our simplest genera, the disyllabic and trisyllabic ascending and descending metres, how are we to classify the varieties of these? First we have the unmixed species of each differing in the number of feet alone; and of these we have two subspecies, one in which the normal line consists of so many perfect feet and nothing more, the other where the law of the metre requires either the addition or the omission of a short unaccented syllable at the beginning or the end of the line. Of addition we have an example in what is called the 'anacrusis' (back stroke), what Dr Abbott has called the 'catch,' a name given to an unaccented hypermetrical syllable preceding the first foot of the line, as in the old Latin Saturnian or its English equivalent the six-foot trochaic,

<sup>1</sup>The | Queen was | in her | parlour | eating | bread and | honey|;    "  
and again in the so-called feminine ending, by which is meant

<sup>1</sup> This might be otherwise explained as made up of a three-foot iambic line with feminine ending, followed by a three-foot trochaic. However, it may

serve for illustration. Other examples of anacrusis will be found in the chapter on Classification of Metres under the head Trochaic.

an unaccented hypermetrical syllable following the last foot of the line, as in

Let's dry | our eyes | and thus | far hear | me Crom|well.

The omission of short syllables at the beginning or end of a line is known as 'truncation.' It occurs most frequently in trisyllabic metres. Thus in

Slow|ly and sad|ly we laid | him down|,

the first anapaest is represented by a monosyllable; and in like manner in

Merrily | merrily | shall I live | now|

the last dactyl is represented by a monosyllable.

Then we have the mixed species, in which the law of the verse requires (not merely permits) the mixture either of the ascending and descending, or of the disyllabic and trisyllabic metres.

In the chapter on the metres of Tennyson I have endeavoured to arrange all the varieties of his verse under the above heads; I will here only add a word as to the means by which one particular kind of iambic verse, the heroic, is varied. The normal rhythm is most clearly seen where the accents are perfectly regular in number and in position, where the end of each foot coincides with the end of a word, and the end of the line coincides with a pause in the sense, especially if there is no clashing between the length of the syllable and the position of the accent. Such a normal line is

And swims | or sinks | or wades | or creeps | or flies|.

Of course a series of such lines would be intolerably monotonous to all who have passed out of the stage in which sugar is the most exquisite of tastes, and the most beautiful of faces that which presents the sharpest contrast of red and white. It was to avoid such monotony that the rule of the caesura was introduced in Greek and Latin verse; that we find great masters of rhythm, such as Virgil and Milton, so careful to vary the position of their stops; that the accents are multiplied, diminished, or

inverted, and the number of syllables lessened or increased. Later on I propose to discuss the limits of such variation.

The business then of the metrist in regard to any set of verses submitted to him is, first, to ascertain the general type of the verse, five-foot iambic, or whatever it may be, and further to state whether it is metrically *complete*, or *incomplete*, owing to final or initial truncation, or *more than complete*, owing to *anacrusis* or feminine ending; in technical language, whether it is *acatalectic*, *catalectic*, or *hypercatalectic*. He has then to point out in each particular line, how far there has been a departure from this general type in respect to the position of the accents or the number of syllables, as by the substitution of a trochee or an anapaest for an iamb, or, say, by the insertion of an extra-metrical syllable in the middle of the line. He has to notice the continuity or discontinuity of the rhythm as determined by grammatical stops or other pauses; and the smoothness or roughness of the rhythm as determined not only by the smoothness or roughness of the separate syllables, the crowding of consonants and so on, but by the relation of the long and short syllables to the normal metrical accents, the grouping of syllables into words, or phrases equivalent to a word, and the division of the words into feet. He has also to notice any special artifices employed by the poet to give harmony to his verses, such as alliteration and rhyme. Lastly, in reading the poem, the metrist has to pay due regard to the rhetorical importance of each word or phrase without allowing this to obscure the more properly metrical effects above described. It may be well to illustrate my meaning, so far as it can be done at this stage of our analysis, by examining the following line of Marlowe's,

See where | Christ's blood | streams in | the fir|nament|.

This is a five-foot iambic with trochaic substitution in the 1st and 3rd feet, and spondaic substitution in the 2nd. There is a rhythmical pause after the 1st, 4th, and 5th syllables, and strong rhetorical emphasis is laid on the 3rd and 5th syllables, *Christ's* and *streams*, which are also very long and connected by alliteration. In compensation the 6th and 7th syllables are

as short and weak as possible, and form one phrase with the last word.

Having thus briefly stated what are my own views on the subject of metre, I shall proceed in the chapters which follow to examine the metrical systems of others, especially those of Dr Guest and Dr Abbott.

## CHAPTER II.

### ANTIQUARIAN A-PRIORISM.

#### DR GUEST ON ENGLISH METRE.

DR GUEST's learned work on the *History of English Rhythms* was published in 1838. Though the book had become very scarce, it was not reprinted during the author's lifetime; and it is therefore uncertain how far it can be considered to represent his final view on the subject of which it treats. Since his death a new edition has appeared (in the year 1882) under the very competent supervision of the Cambridge Professor of Anglo-Saxon, who has made many corrections in detail, but who probably did not feel himself at liberty to do what, I think, was required, and recast it throughout. If the book was to be reprinted, and no doubt it possesses permanent value in its copious illustrations, it appears to me that it would have been better to throw it into two separate treatises, one on the history of the Early-English Language and Literature, and the other on the history of English Metre down to the 16th century, omitting altogether the reference to later metres. I will not take upon me to say that, even as to our earlier metres, Dr Guest would always have been a trustworthy guide. I observe that in many instances his scanning of Anglo-Saxon or Early-English metres is objected to by Professor Skeat, and Dr Guest himself owns (p. 525) that he is unable to understand the nature of Chaucer's versification, as to which the editor says in a note 'thanks to the patient researches of Professor Child and Mr Ellis and the grammatical rules of Dr Morris, the scansion of Chaucer is now a tolerably easy matter.'

My object, however, in these chapters, is not to trace the historical development of English metres from their first beginning, but to ascertain the laws of versification which have been observed by the English poets generally during the last three hundred years, and to lay down a simple and natural system of scansion. It is from this point of view that I find Dr Guest's book so entirely misleading and unsatisfactory; and as it comes out now under the apparent sanction of one of our chief authorities, and is also referred to in the Cambridge Shakespeare (vol. I. p. XVII.) as the best guide to the understanding of Shakespearian versification, I feel bound to state plainly my reasons against it. I shall therefore endeavour to show that the system there laid down is not only most perplexing for the ordinary reader, but that it insists on a rule which has been obsolete for centuries, that it condemns, as unrhythmical, verses which, I will venture to say, the great majority of educated men find perfectly satisfying to their ear, that it approves what to them appears mere discord, and throws together lines regular and irregular, possible and impossible, in the most bewildering confusion<sup>1</sup>.

Dr Guest holds that our modern English metres should conform in the main to the rules of the Anglo-Saxon verse; his account of which may be thus summarized. "Our Anglo-Saxon poems consist of certain sections bound together in pairs by alliteration. The pure elementary section cannot have more than three, or less than two, accents. Each couple of adjacent accents must be separated by not more than two unaccented syllables; but two accents may come together, if the place of the intervening syllable is supplied by a pause,

<sup>1</sup> The view stated in the text is shared by Dr Schipper (*Englische Metrik* p. 2): "Dr Guest macht die älteste Form englischer Poesie, nämlich die alliterierende Langzeile, oder vielmehr die rhythmische Section derselben, zur Basis auch der späteren unter ganz anderen Einflüssen sich entwickelnden englischen Verskunst und zieht aus dieser Voraussetzung

dann natürlich ganz falsche Schlüsse. Eine weitere Folge davon ist, dass es so verworren angelegt und durchgeführt ist, dass man sich nur mit grosser Mühe, selbst wenn man von seinem Gedankengange sich leiten lässt, hindurchfinden kann, und so ist denn das Werk, trotz der grossen Fülle von Material, die es bietet, als gänzlich veraltet und unbrauchbar zu bezeichnen."



called the sectional pause. When the accent is separated by one syllable, the rhythm is called *common measure*; when by two, *triple measure*. A section may begin (and similarly it may end) with an accented syllable or with not more than two unaccented syllables. There are three pauses which serve for the regulation of the rhythm, *final*, *middle* and *sectional*. The two former are necessary and essential, the third is exceptional. The final pause occurs at the end of a verse, the middle pause divides it into two sections, the sectional pause is found in the middle of one of these sections. As a general rule we may lay it down that the final and middle pauses ought always to coincide with the close of a sentence or clause. 'We never meet with a grammatical stop in the middle of a section. The sectional pause seems to have been only used before words on which it was intended to throw a powerful emphasis" pp. 144—161.

I proceed to test this doctrine of the sections, and I will begin first with the final pause. Is this observed by our best poets? Dr Guest himself confesses that it is not (p. 145). "There never was a greater violation of those first principles, "on which all rhythm must depend, than placing the final pause "in the middle of a word. Yet of this gross fault Milton has "been guilty more than once." And he cites *P. L.* 10. 580 as an example,

Ophion, with Eurynome, the wide-  
Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
Of high Olympus.

"Another serious fault is committed when the final pause separates a qualifying word from the word qualified, e.g.

And God created the great whales, and *each*  
*Soul* living, each that crept. *P. L.* 7. 391.

To judgment he proceeded on the *accursed*  
*Serpent*, though brute. *P. L.* 10. 163.

"Or when it separates the preposition from the words governed by it, or the personal pronoun from the governing verb, as :

Read o'er this,  
And after this, and then to breakfast *with*  
*What appetite* you have. *H. VIII.* 3. 2. 201.

Let it suffice thee that thou *know'st*  
*Us happy, and without love no happiness.*" *P. L.* 8. 620.

This "serious fault," it may be observed, is one to which Shakespeare became more and more prone in his later years. In the earliest plays the sense very commonly closes at the end of the line; in the later his structure is more broken, and his lines frequently close with unaccented syllables connected in sense with what follows.

As to the rule that the end of the verse, the 'final pause,' shall always coincide with the end of a sentence or clause, I find on looking through the first fifty lines of the *P. L.*, that, in Pickering's edition, 34 out of the whole number have no final stop, while 10 close with a comma, and only 6 with a more important stop. So again as regards the rule of the 'middle pause.' Put in more familiar language, this means that there should be a stop, or at all events a break in the line, at the end of the second or third foot, or in the middle of the third or fourth. This is at any rate a rule easy of observance; if it is really essential to the rhythm, there is no excuse to be made for the poet who neglects it. And so in fact Dr Guest feels. He quotes (p. 149) with reprobation the lines

Unbrid|led sen|sual|ity | begat |.  
 Thy an|ger un|appeas|able | still ra|ges.

And in p. 185, after granting that "the adoption of foreign metre brought into our language many verses which neither had, nor were intended to have, the middle pause," he goes on to say that "our poetry quickly worked itself free from such admixture," and therefore, "when we meet (four-accent) verses "such as the following:

Guiding | the fi|ery-wheel|ed throne|,  
 The cher|ub Con|templa|tion|,

"I do not see how we can treat them otherwise than as false "rhythm; or, if the middle pause be disowned, at least require "that they should not intrude among verses of a different "character and origin. If the poet make no account of the "pause, let him be consistent and reject its aid altogether. If "he prefer the rhythm of the foreigner, let him show his in-

"genuity in a correct imitation, and not fall back upon our "English verse when his skill is exhausted. Both foreign and "English rhythms are injured by being jumbled together in this "slovenly and inartificial manner." Again, in p. 560, speaking of Milton's use of the heroic verse, it is said, "He varied the "flow of the rhythm and lengthened the sections; these were "legitimate alterations; he split the sections and overlaid the "pauses, and the law of his metre was broken, the science of his "versification gone."

It may be worth while to add a few more examples of the non-observance of this middle pause, by way of showing how little it has been regarded by our best poets, and how far it is from being essential to the beauty of the rhythm. Thus in Ben Jonson's famous lines we have

That makes | simpli|city | a grace | .  
Than all | the adul|teries | of art | .

I should have added Milton's line

And ev|er a|gainst ea|ting cares |

but I observe that Dr Guest marks it as having a pause after *against* (p. 101). It is at any rate an instance in point, as showing that Milton did not think himself bound to break the sense in the middle, any more than at the end of the line. In the first fifty lines of *P. L.*, I find that 22 are printed without a stop in the central portion of the line, embracing all the syllables at which the middle pause might occur. In the first fifty lines of Pope's *Essay on Man*, there are 23 lines, and in Tennyson's *Morte d'Arthur* 26 out of 50, without a central stop. I do not mean to say that in all these lines there should be precisely the same pause after each of the central syllables or words, but there are many of them in which the poet seems to have aimed at a uniform unbroken rhythm, perhaps by way of contrast to the broken rhythm of preceding lines.

Such are:

I may assert eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to man. *P. L.* 1. 25.

Or ask of yonder argent fields above. Pope, *Ess.* i 41.

A little thing may harm a wounded man.

Rose up from out the bosom of the lake. *Morte d'Arthur.*

So much for the rule that there must be a stop in the middle, and at the end, of a line. I now proceed to consider the converse rule, that there must be no sectional stop, i.e. no stop except at the middle and the end. Here too Dr Guest has to confess that the practice of the poets is against him. "A very favourite stop with Shakespeare was the one before the last accented syllable of the verse. Under his sanction it has become familiar, though opposed to every principle of accentual rhythm." Among the examples quoted of this objectionable rhythm is one certainly of the most exquisite lines in the English language,

Loud, as from numbers without number, sweet

As from blest voices uttering joy. *P. L.* 3. 345.

. Even the correct Pope sins in the same fashion, e.g.

And, to their proper operation, still

Ascribe all good, to their improper, ill. *Essay*, II 58.

Force first made conquest, and that conquest, law. III 245.

And Dryden in *Abs. and Ach.*

Thee, Saviour, thee the nation's vows confess,

And, never satisfied with blessing, bless.

and Tennyson in the *Gardener's Daughter*,

Divided in a graceful quiet, paused,

And dropt the branch she held, and turning, wound

Her looser hair in braid.

Dr Guest, in spite of his theory, does not seem to object much to the stop following the 8th syllable of the heroic line, as in Milton *P. L.* 1. 10.

Or, if Sion hill

Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook, that flowed

Fast by the oracle of God; I thence

Invoke thy aid.

Nor to the stop after the first accent, when it falls on the 2nd syllable, as in Pope's

Say first, of God above, or man below,

What can we reason, but from what we know?

But he speaks of the stop after an accented first syllable, or an unaccented second, following an accented first syllable, as being alike inadmissible.

Of the former we have not only the magnificent examples in Milton;

Death his dart  
Shook, but delayed to strike, though oft invoked. *P. L.* 11. 491.  
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent  
Before him, such as in their souls infused  
Plagues; *P. L.* 6. 830.

but even in Pope it is not uncommon, e.g.

Know, nature's children all divide her care. *Essay*, III 43.  
Where, but among the heroes and the wise? *Essay*, IV 218.

Of the latter Milton makes a scarcely inferior use in the lines

And now his heart  
Distends with pride, and, hardening in his strength  
Glories. *P. L.* 1. 571.  
On Lemnos, th' Aegean isle: thus they relate  
Erring: *P. L.* 1. 746.

but Pope too admits this stop without scruple, provided the pause is not so great as to complete the sense.

Passions, though selfish, if their means be fair,  
List under reason and deserve her care. *Essay*, II 96

In showing what Draconian justice Dr Guest deals out to the poets who offend against his *à priori* rules, I do not mean to deny that, in general, a more pleasing rhythm is obtained by a pause in the middle or at the end of a verse, than by one immediately after the first or before the last syllable; but the very fact that such a rhythm is usually avoided makes it all the more effective, when the word thus isolated is felt to be weighty enough to justify its position, as in the examples from Milton. I hardly think the rhythm is justified in the lines which follow, taken from Mr Swinburne's *Marino Faliero*:

p. v,

Pride, from profoundest humbleness of heart  
Born, self-uplift at once and self-subdued  
Glowed, seeing his face whose hand had borne such part.

p. 18,

It does not please thee then, if silence have  
Speech, and if thine speak true, to hear me praise  
Bertuccio? Has my boy deserved of thee  
Ill?

p. 98,

How these knaves,  
Whose life is service or rebellion, fear  
Death! and a child high-born would shame them.  
If  
Death seems so gracious in a great man's eyes,  
Die, my Lord :

p. 117,

Let there be night, and there was night—who says  
That?  
Nor now, nor then, nor ever now need that  
Be.

Dr Guest continues (p. 156) "our poets sometimes place a stop after the third syllable, but never I think happily." As an instance he quotes

What in me is dark  
Illumine, what is low raise and support. *P. L.* 1. 22.

Milton has this three times in his first ten lines, and even Pope has it four times in ten lines (*Essay*, I 66—74). It is also common with Tennyson.

I have thought it worth while to add these instances from Pope, because Dr Guest is accustomed to refer to him as a model of correct versification. Thus he ends his chapter on the *stops* with the words "When we see how nearly the freedom of "our elder poets approached to license, we may appreciate, in "some measure the obligations we are under to the school of "Pope and Dryden. The attempts to revive the abuses, which "they reformed, have happily, as yet, met with only partial "success" (p. 157). We may compare with this what is said in p. 529, the meaning of which will become apparent as we proceed: "The rhythm of Pope and Dryden differed from "Milton's in three particulars. It always counted the lengthen- "ing syllable of the first section; it admitted three syllables

"only in the *second* foot of the abrupt section; and it rejected "the sectional pause." Milton's practice is stated just before, "he did not always count the lengthening syllable of the first "section. An abrupt section was furnished with a foot of three "syllables—the first section always, the second in all cases but "those in which the first section had a lengthening syllable "which was counted in the verse. The pausing section 7 p. "was sometimes admitted as his first section, and is some- "times found lengthened." [The Cimmerian darkness of the last sentence had better be cleared up at once; the rest will explain itself as we go on. By 'pausing section' Dr Guest means a section in which a pause takes the place of an unaccented syllable. His 'section 7' is of the form *bAbAbbA* (*A* standing for accented, *b* for unaccented syllables); '7 p.' means that the second unaccented syllable is represented by a pause (giving the form *bA-AbbA*), as in Milton *P. L.* 1. 253, which Dr Guest scans

A mind | *not* | to be changed | : by place | or time |

the pause after *mind*, together with the monosyllable *not*, representing the 2nd foot.

A pausing section is lengthened when an unaccented syllable is added at the end, as in *P. L.* 10. 71.

On earth | *these* | thy transgressors : *but* | thou knowst |

According to Dr Guest's system the monosyllables *these* and *but*, with the preceding pauses, stand for the 2nd and 4th feet; and the last syllable of *transgressors* is superfluous, a feminine ending of the first section.]

In p. 531 other faults of Milton's verse are pointed out. "The verbal accent is often disregarded and the same word "variously accented even within the compass of a few lines." "Milton's passion for variety too often endangers his metre. "Not only do his pauses" (i.e. the places where Dr Guest thinks there ought to be pauses, at the middle and end of the line) "divide portions of the sentence, most intimately connected "together, but frequently we have periods ending in the midst "of a section, and sometimes immediately after the first, or "before the last syllable of the verse." If beauty is thus

procured, "it is a beauty beyond the reach of Milton's metre, "a beauty therefore which he had no right to meddle with. "Versification ceases to be a science, if its laws may be thus "lightly broken."

We have already found that, in regard to the position of stops, even our least adventurous poets have asserted the right, which Dr Guest would deny them, of breaking the sense at any point in the line. We proceed to examine the other alleged divergences between the metres of Milton and Pope. The former, it is said, did "not always count the lengthening syllable of the first section." By this it is meant that Milton, as he occasionally introduces a feminine ending of the line, e.g.

That durst | dislike | his reign | and me | prefer|ring,

so he admits a superfluous syllable after the section or half-line. I have no wish to deny that lines may be found even in our latest poets, which are evidently composed of two sections, and in which the first and last foot of either section are allowed all the privileges of the first and last foot of the line. Such lines are Tennyson's long trochaics treated of in another chapter. Whether Milton ever regarded his heroic verse as made up of two sections may be doubted. Shakespeare was, I think, so far conscious of the section, as occasionally to make it a pretext for introducing an extra syllable. Mr A. J. Ellis does not grant even this. He considers that all cases which have been explained on this principle, are really examples of trisyllabic feet. And no doubt, such an explanation is possible in by far the largest number of instances. The question is really complicated with two others, in which I think Dr Guest takes an erroneous view. He regards it, not as a rare exception (such as we find in Chaucer) but as a recognized and established variety of the heroic line for a single accented syllable to take the place of the iambic foot at the beginning of a section, or after what he calls the 'sectional pause.' To a section which thus commences with an accent he gives the name of the 'abrupt section'; and he thinks that it makes no difference to the regularity and correctness of the verse, whether this first accent is separated from the second by one unaccented syllable or by two. The



other question is as to the admissibility of trisyllabic feet. As Dr Guest distinctly recognizes the 'triple measure,' one would have thought there could have been no doubt on this subject, but it would seem from several passages that, except in what he calls the tumbling metre, he would desire to confine it to his abrupt section. If he is forced to admit its use elsewhere, he indemnifies himself by denouncing it as licentious; but in general he seeks to explain away such examples on the principle of elision. Thus in p. 37 he supposes *believe*, *betray*, *belike*, to lose their first syllable in the lines

Let pi|ty not | be *belie*|ved there | she shook | *Lear*, 4. 3. 31.

To *betray* | the head|y hus|bands rob | the ea|sy

B. Jons. *Cat.* 3. 3.

O *belike* | his maj|esty | hath some | intent | *R. III.* 1. 1. 49.

Instances of two vowels compressed into one are given in p. 41.

*Knowing* who | I am | as I | know who | thou art | *P. R.* 1. 355.

Half *flying* | behoves | him now | both oar | and sail |

*P. L.* 2. 941.

Of *riot* | ascends | above | their loft|iest tow'rs | *P. L.* 1. 498.

Without | *media*|tor whose | high offi|ce now | *P. L.* 12. 239.

Instances of short vowel elided before *m*, in p. 47.

*Legit*|imate Ed|gar I | must have | your land | *Lear*, 1. 2. 15.

His mind | so *ven*|omously | that burn|ing shame | *Lear*, 4. 3. 47.

before *ng* p. 52.

With *telling* | me of | the mold|warp and | the ant |

1 *H. IV.* 3. 1. 148.

This oath | I *willing*|ly take | and will | perform |

3 *H. VI.* 1. 1. 201.

before *l* or *r* pp. 55, 57.

A third | more op|ulent than | your sis|ters? Speak | *Lear*, 1. 1. 87.

Will but | *remember* | me what | a deal | of world | *R. II.* 1. 3. 268.

Other examples of elision are

Her *del*|icate cheek | it seemed | she was | a queen | *Lear*, 4. 3. 13.

Needs must | the ser|pent now | his *cap|ital* bruise | *P. L.* 12. 383.

Your *hor|rible* plea|sure here | I stand | your slave | *Lear*, 3. 2. 18.

Of the last line it is said (p. 63), "It is clear that *horrible* is a disyllable but whether it should be pronounced *hor|ble* or *hor|rib|l'* may be doubted: the latter is perhaps the safer."

Recourse is also had to 'synalœpha', as in the following:

<sup>1</sup>Pas|sion and ap|athy: and *glo|ry and* shame | *P. L.* 2. 564.

An|guish and doubt | and *fear|*: and *sor|row and* pain | *P. L.* 1. 558.

*No un|grate|ful* food|: and food | alike | those pure | *P. L.* 5. 407.

\* The three following were quoted by Tyrwhitt to show that the heroic verse admitted three syllables in any one of the first three feet.

*Ominous* | con|ject|ure on | the whole | success | *P. L.* 2. 123.

*A pil|lar* of state | deep | in his front | engrav|en *P. L.* 2. 301.

Ce|lest|jal *spi|rits* in bond|age nor | the aby|ss | *P. L.* 1. 658.

Dr Guest says on this (p. 175), "if a critic of Tyrwhitt's reputation did not know that *ominous*, *pillar*, and *spirit* were to "be pronounced *om'nous*, *pill'r*, and *sp'rit*, can we fairly expect "such knowledge to flash, as it were by intuition, on the unin-" "structed reader? Of late years, however, the fashionable "opinion has been that in such cases the vowel may be pro-" "nounced without injury to the rhythm. Thelwall discovered "in Milton an *appogiatura* or syllable more than is counted in "the bar, and was of opinion that such syllables constitute an "essential part of the expressive harmony of the best writers "and should never be superseded by the barbarous expedient "of elision. He reads the following verses one with twelve and "the other with thirteen syllables!

\* Covering the beach and blackening the strand. Dryden.

Ungrateful offering to the immortal powers. Pope.

"There *are* men entitled to our respect whose writings have, "to a certain extent, countenanced this error. Both Words-

<sup>1</sup> By the colon Dr Guest marks what he considers to be the middle pause; by the bar he denotes that the preceding syllable bears the accent.

"worth and Coleridge use certain words, as though they still contained the same number of syllables, as in the time of Shakespeare. Thus they make *delicate* a dissyllable, yet "would certainly shrink from pronouncing it *del'cate*." He adds that the pettiness of the delinquency cannot be pleaded in defence of this sacrifice of rhythm, for "if a short and evanescent syllable may be obtruded, so may a long one." It is with pleasure we read Prof. Skeat's note on the above: "On the contrary I think that the pettiness of the delinquency *may* be pleaded....The true rule concerning trisyllabic feet is simply this, that the intrusive syllable should be as short and light as possible. A good example is Pope's favourite line

The free|zing Tan|ais through | a waste | of snows |

"Here the intrusive syllable is the short *a* in *Tanais* and "is very light and short, as it should be. It adds a great beauty "to the verse, as may easily be perceived by reading *Tannis* and "comparing the results<sup>1</sup>." Prof. Skeat thinks the author must have subsequently abandoned his theory, 'because,' he says, 'examples of trisyllabic feet abound in the later part of the book'. And he cites from p. 217

Write | them togeth|er: your's | is as fair | a name |

*Jul. Caes.* 1. 2. 144.

Mo | from attemp|ting: where|fore do I | assume |

*P.L.* 2. 450.

Let | me not think | on't: frail|ty thy name | is wom|an

*Hamlet*, 1. 2. 146.

But these all come under the category of the abrupt section, in which Dr Guest has always admitted the triple measure. Thus in the very line, in which he denies Tyrwhitt's right to find a trisyllabic second foot, he has himself no difficulty in recognizing a trisyllabic fourth foot, because it follows an initial accent, i.e. a monosyllabic foot commencing a section:

A pillar | of state|: deep | in his front | engra|ven.

We do however find some instances which cannot be thus explained as in pp. 166, 225, 239 and 240:

That | invin|cible Sam|son: far | renowned |

Liko | the first | of a thun|der: show'r | and now |

<sup>1</sup> Cf. also the editor's note on p. 51.

In | their trip|le degrees|: re|gions to which |  
 Shoots | invis|ible vir|tue: e'en | to the deep |  
 With | impet|uous recoil|: and jar|rings sound |  
 We may bold|ly spend|: upon | the hope | of what |  
 In elect|ion for|: the Ro|man emper|y |<sup>1</sup>

Then comes the question, whether the evidence adduced in support of a superfluous syllable at the end of the first section, may not be explained on the hypothesis of such a trisyllabic foot in the middle of the line; whether in fact there is anything more to be said in its favour than for the extra syllable which Dr Abbott admits before a pause in any part of the Shakespearian line (*S. G.* § 454), or the superfluous unemphatic syllable which he allows in any foot (*S. G.* § 456). I have treated of Shakespearian usage in another chapter. As to Milton, I venture to say that, of all the numerous instances cited by Dr Guest of an extra syllable before the middle pause, there is not one which may not be more easily explained as a trisyllabic foot. And the great advantage of such an explanation is that it enables us to get rid of the monosyllabic foot and all the exceptional rules which this necessitates. For instance Dr Guest's complicated rule, "An abrupt section was (by Milton) furnished with a foot of three syllables, the first section always, the second in all cases but those in which the first section had a lengthening syllable which was counted in the verse," is exemplified in the lines

Oth|ers apart|: sat | on a hill | retired |  
 A|ges of hope|less end|: this | would be worse |  
 Write | them togeth|er: yours | is as fair | a name |  
 Confound|ed though | immor|tal: but | his doom |.

How far more simple does the metrical analysis become, as soon as we recognize that the accentual trochee and anapaest are permitted alternatives for the iamb, and that the middle pause has no metrical effect. Marking the *feet* by bars, I find in the line

<sup>1</sup> I do not of course agree with Dr Guest's scansion of these lines, excepting the last two. The first four commence with a double trochee, of which more hereafter: the third has also a

trochee in the last foot but one. The fifth line may be read as beginning with trochee followed by dactyl, or the first foot is an anapaest, the remaining feet iambs.

Óthers | apárt | sát on | a híll | retíred |

a trochee in the first and third feet; and in

Write them | togéth|er, yóurs | is as fáir | a náme |

a trochee in the first foot and an anapaest in the fourth.

But Dr Guest not only admits a monosyllabic foot, when it is followed by two unaccented syllables (which we have seen to be his way of describing trochee followed by iamb), but also when it is separated by one unaccented syllable from the next accent. This is in fact his first rhythm (p. xvii.), which he denotes by the formula *AbA*, and of which he cites as examples:

Ja|el who | with hos|pita|ble guile|. p. 210.

Which | by God's | will: kind | and calm|ly blows|. p. 211.

With | the love | juice: as | I bid | thee do | . p. 215.

For | the cool shade|: thith|er has|tily got|. p. 215.

As | throw out | our eyes|: for brave | Othel|lo. p. 232.

So | by for|mer lec|ture: and | advice | . p. 233.

It is scarcely credible that any educated person could have read these lines without suspecting some error; but such is the force of erroneous theory, that Dr Guest could actually thus *misread* lines which are correctly given as follows, both in Professor Skeat's notes, and in any editions which I have been able to consult.

Jael | who with | *in*hos|pita|ble guile | *Sams. Ag.* 989.

Which by | God's will | *full* kynd | and calm|ly blows | . *Gascoyne.*

With the | love juice | as I | *did* bid | thee do |

*M. N. D.* 3. 2. 36.

For the | cool shade | *him* thith|er hast|ily got | *F. Q.* 1. 2. 29.

As *to* | throw out | our eyes | for brave | Othel|lo *Oth.* 2. 1. 36.

So by | *my* for|mer lec|ture and | advice | *Hamlet,* 2. 1. 64.

These are not by any means all the misquotations noticed by the editor. Where the lines are rightly given, they are frequently mis-scanned; or else they are mispronounced or mis-divided or were never meant to be complete verses. A very small fraction remain which are probably corrupt, or in any

case are so exceptional, that it is absurd to base a theory of metre upon them. I give examples of each class, with Dr G.'s scansion.

p. 209,

vive | le roi|: as | I have banked | their towers |.

Here *vive* ought to be read as a disyllable, as is shown by Dr Abbott, *S. G.* § 489.

Several of the instances given contain exclamations, which may be either extra-metrical, as p. 250,

• O | ye Gods | ye Gods | must I | endure | all this |

or may be lengthened or repeated at pleasure, as in p. 211,

Tut! | when struck'st | thou: one | blow in | the field |  
O | this learn|ing: what | a thing | it is |.

Others are intended to be fragmentary, as in p. 211,

Nev|er! nev|er!: come | away | away |.

The scanning is in fault in pp. 234, 235,

See | him pluck | Aufid|ius: down | by the hair |

which properly begins with a trisyllabic foot,

See him pluck | Aufid|ius | down by | the hair |

and

What | an al|tera|tion: of hon|our has |

where *alteration* has really five syllables and the line should be divided

What an alt|era|tion | of ho|nour has |.

The same unfortunate theory has converted five-foot iambics into Alexandrines, as in p. 249,

• Hath | he asked | for me|: know | you not | he has |

p. 292,

I knew | not which | to take|: and what | to leave,| ha|!  
Bound | to keep life | in drones|: and id|le moths|? No |!

The first of these lines should be divided

• Hath he | asked for | me know | you not | he has |

In the 2nd and 3rd we have extra-metrical exclamations absurdly forced into the lines; indeed the 2nd is printed as prose in the Globe edition.

p. 250,

We'll | along | ourselves|: and meet | them at | Philip|pi  
Vir|tue as | I thought|: truth du|ty so | enjoin|ing.

The former verse may either be read with an initial anapaest, or the first syllable of *along* disappears (see Abbott § 460). The latter commences with a trochee and anapaest, unless we suppose with Dr Abbott that the 2nd and 3rd syllables run into one.

We have thus seen that Milton knows nothing of abrupt section and middle pause, and that the rhythmical effects, described by Dr Guest under these names, are easily explained by the fact that he admits freely trochaic and trisyllabic feet. We will next enquire whether he admits a monosyllabic foot under the guise of the 'sectional pause.' Before we can answer this, we must examine Dr Guest's view of the concurrence of accented syllables. He finds great fault with Dr Johnson for suggesting that sometimes the accent is equally strong upon two adjoining syllables, as (p. 75)

Thus at their shady lodge arrived, *both stood*,  
*Both turned*.

"Here," it is said, "every reader of taste would pronounce the words *stood*, *turned*, with a greater stress than that which falls on the word preceding. But these words are at least equal in quantity, and Johnson fell into the mistake of considering quantity identical with accent." On the contrary I should say that every reader of common sense would feel that the repeated *both* was strongly emphatic and that Johnson was quite right in laying at least equal stress on the two words. I am glad to find the editor in his note on p. 416 refusing his assent to Dr Guest's dictum, that two accented syllables cannot come together. I think however that he is mistaken in speaking of the examples given in p. 281 as inconsistent with Dr Guest's theory, because in those examples a pause is supposed to inter-

vene between the accented syllables and to be equivalent to an omitted syllable. The fact is Dr Guest, finding he could not get rid of all cases of adjacent accents either by the numerous exceptions admitted in Bk I. ch. 4, or by his theory of abrupt sections, bethought him of the sectional pause, as a further means of explaining all cases in which trochee followed on iamb. Thus in the line quoted on p. 295

A mind | nót to | be changed| by place | or time |

he makes the accented *not* a monosyllabic foot, and considers that it may follow accented *mind* because there is an intervening pause occupying the time of an unaccented syllable. Similarly the line

He speáks | lét us | dráw néar | máтчless | in might |

takes with him the form

He speáks | lét | us, draw near|: máтч|less in might|.

We are now in a position to understand Dr Guest's remarks quoted above on p. 19 as to the difference between the rhythm of Pope and Milton. Pope, it is there said, always counted the lengthening syllable of the first section (i.e. ignored Dr Guest's sections); but so, as we have seen, did Milton. Pope rejected the sectional pause (i.e. did not follow up iamb with trochee) This, I grant, is much rarer in Pope than Milton, but still we find such a line as

Is the | gréat cháin | that dráws | áll to | agree | *Essay*, I 33.

which on Dr Guest's system would require a sectional pause between *draws* and *all*, and must be divided as follows :

• Is | the great chain|: that draws | all | to agree |

The third distinction is, that Pope admits three syllables only in the 2nd foot, but the line just quoted would be an example of a final trisyllabic, if read with the sectional pause; and in the 'favorite line'

The freez|ing Tan|ais through | a waste | of snows |



we have three syllables in the 3rd foot. Compare also the following<sup>1</sup>:

*Annual* | for me | the grape | the rose | renew |  
 The juice | necta|reous and | the bal|my dew | *Essay*, I 134.  
 Then na|ture de|viates and | can man | do less | *ib.* 150.  
 Account | for mor|al as | for nat|ural things | *ib.* 162.  
 To inspect | a mite | not com|prehend | the heaven | *ib.* 197.  
 From the | green my|riads in | the peo|pled grass | *ib.* 210.  
 For ev|er sep|arate yet | for ev|er near | *ib.* 224.

If it be said, these should be slurred, so as to make them disyllables, it may be replied that, that is just what Dr Guest said of Milton's trisyllabic feet in the first part of his book, though here at the end (p. 529) he has to confess that the common view is the right one.

The remaining charge brought against Milton is that he disregards the verbal accent. This is merely Dr Guest's admission that his system, with all its cycles and epicycles, does not really accord with the facts, οὐ σώζει τὰ φαινόμενα. He assumes that, except where the normal rhythm is broken through by the law of sections and pauses, every foot in the heroic measure is bound to be strictly iambic. But he laments that here, as elsewhere, the poets will persist in disobeying his laws. Their iambs are such as to defy all rules of accentuation. They accent the article and the preposition more strongly than the noun, as in (p. 81 foll.)

A third | thought wise | and lear|ned a | fourth rich | B. Jonson.  
 She was | not the | prime cause | but I | myself | Milton, *S. A.* 234.  
 Profaned | first by | the ser|pent by | him first | P. L. 9. 929.

["Here," it is said, "the pronoun requires an emphasis which makes the false accentuation still more glaring."]

They give a stronger accent to the possessive pronoun than to the following adjective, to the personal and relative pronoun than to the verb, as in Fletcher's

That I | may sit | and pour | out my | sad sprite.

<sup>1</sup> Some might prefer to divide some of the lines differently, e.g.

The juice | necta|reous | and the bal|my dew |

["This verse of Fletcher has even more than his usual proportion of blunders. With proper accents it would belong to the triple measure,

That | I may sit | and pour out | my sad sprite | ”

I do not know how others may feel, but to me this utter misconception of a most beautiful line is a conclusive proof of Dr Guest's unfitness to write on the subject of metre.]

So in Milton's

Crea|ted hulgest *that* | swim th' o|cean stream. *P. L.* 1. 200.

The most cruel blow is, that even Pope should be an offender in these respects, e.g.

The treach|erous col|ours *the* | fair art | betray | *Criticism*, 492.

In words | as fash|ions *the* | same rule | will hold | *do.* 333.

Against | the po|et *their* | own arms | they turned | *do.* 106.

Now what is the real state of the case? Do we really suppose that the poets were so foolish as to lay an unnatural stress on the most unimportant word in the line, and so destroy the force and meaning of the line? Is it not plain that they intended to vary the ordinary rhythm by introducing an accentual pyrrhic followed by an accentual spondee (e.g. the treach|erous col|ours *thē* | fair ārt | betray|) and that the result produced by this means is most satisfactory to the educated ear?

I think that I have said enough to show that Dr Guest, with all his learning, is not a safe guide to the study of metre. There is hardly a single rule which he has laid down, which is not in flat opposition to the practice of the poets of the last three centuries. Tried by his code, they are all miserable sinners, they have left undone what they ought to have done, and done what they ought not to have done. They know nothing of that which he makes the foundation of his system, the doctrine of the sections and pauses; they put their stops wherever it pleases them; they substitute freely trochees, pyrrhics, spondees and trisyllabic feet for the iamb. But Dr Guest's theory not only condemns as unmetrical what is proved to be metrical by the consistent practice of the poets;

he is, as we have seen, equally unfortunate in admitting what is palpably impossible. He mistakes a verse belonging to one metre for a verse belonging to another metre, e.g. the five-foot, for the six-foot iambic, and puts under the same head verses belonging to different metrical systems, as in p. 198, where he gives, as examples of the formula *bAbA : AbbAb*, two lines, one iambic, the other anapaestic.

Well struck | in years | fair | and not jealous *R. III. 1. 1. 90.*

Forthwith | how thou | oughtst | to receive | him *S. Agon. 328.*

The former is no doubt difficult, but it occurs in the middle of a speech of the ordinary heroic verse, and unless there is very strong reason to be contrary, it should be treated as such itself. Dr Abbott (*S. G.* § 480) says "it might be possible to scan as" follows :

Well struck | in ye|ars, fa|ir and | not jea|lous

"but the Folio has *jealous* and the word is often thus written "and pronounced by Elizabethan authors." If *jealous*, which may be compared with the archaic *stupendious*, is rejected, I should myself prefer to make the last foot a trochee, as in *Macbeth*, 5. 5. 32.

But know | not how | to do | it. Well, | sáy, sir |

It would then be divided as follows

Well struck | in ye|ars fair | and not | jea|lous |

The line from *Samson Agonistes* should be compared with other examples of anapaestic metre in the same poem, e.g.

Or the sphere | of for|tune rai|ses. 1. 172.

Univer|sally crowned | with high|est prai|ses. 1. 175.

So this should be divided

Forthwith | how thou ou|ghtst | to rece|ive | him

Milton probably intended it to correspond to the *versus paroemiacus*, or *anapaestic dimeter catalectic*, which formed the closing line of the anapaestic system in Greek.

The points named above, as condemnatory of Dr Guest's system, are selected from a very much larger number which

I had noted down in three distinct perusals of his book. I have thought it right to give my criticisms a permanent form, not in the least from a wish to depreciate the value of the author's work in this and other departments of English history and literature. On the contrary I have a most sincere respect for his industry and independence. I think later writers might have avoided some errors into which they have fallen if they had considered more carefully the evidence which he has accumulated. But in my opinion the book is entirely unfitted to be, what is still a desideratum in English education, a practical guide to the study of metre.

## CHAPTER III.

### LOGICAL A-PRIORISM.

#### DR ABBOTT ON ENGLISH METRE.

DR GUEST's system of prosody is, as far as I know, original ; that which comes next for consideration, Dr Abbott's, is a modification of what may be called the traditional system. In its general outline, I believe this to be also the true and natural system, giving technical expression to the practice of the best writers and readers of poetry, and not setting up an antiquarian standard to which they are required to conform. In the particular form, however, which Dr Abbott has given to this system, he seems to me to have gone wrong in the same way as Dr Guest, by insisting on certain *a priori* rules, which it is not always easy to reconcile with the practice of the poets. He has the advantage over Dr Guest in starting with the true normal line, instead of the fictitious sections, but he is too much enamoured with a mechanical regularity, and makes too little allowance for the freedom of English versification.

The general theory is given in the *Shakespearian Grammar*, 2nd ed. 1870, §§ 452—515, and in the Third Part of Abbott and Seeley's *English Lessons for English People*, 1871, §§ 97—150<sup>1</sup>.

The foot, not the section, is there assumed as the basis of metre. It is defined as the smallest recurring combination of syllables. In English the names of feet, trochee, iambus, &c.

<sup>1</sup> The metrical rules laid down in the older book, for which Dr Abbott is solely responsible, seem to be some-

what less sweeping than those in the later book, in which he is a co-worker with Prof. Seeley.

denote groups of accented and non-accented syllables without regard to quantity. *Accent* means a loud stress of voice. A distinction is made between *word-accent* and *metrical accent*. Every polysyllable has at least one word-accent. The accent of monosyllables depends upon their collocation. The metrical accent, if it falls on a word at all, must fall on its principal word-accent, but it may also fall on a syllable which has no word-accent (e.g. on a monosyllable or on the last syllable of a tri-syllabic word such as *merrily*). We can never have three consecutive clearly pronounced syllables without a metrical accent. Emphasis is a stress laid on monosyllables or the word-accent of polysyllables, for the purpose of calling attention to the meaning. In poetry an emphatic syllable generally receives the metrical accent, but we sometimes find the metrical accent falling on an unemphatic syllable, and followed by an emphatic non-accented syllable. It is rarely that all the metrical accents of a line are also emphatic. In reading we should allow emphasis as well as accent to exert its influence. Any monosyllable, however unemphatic, that comes between two unaccented monosyllables (this should be *syllables*) must receive a metrical accent in disyllabic metre. As examples we have (*Eng. Less.* p. 155 foll.)

Oh, weep for Adonais. *The* quick dreams.  
Then tore with bloody talon *the* rent plain.  
Spreads his light wings and *in* a moment flies.  
Make satire *a* lampoon and fiction lie.

The difficulty which occurs to us on reading these lines is, how we are to make the metrical accent on the italicized syllables correspond to the definition of accent, "a loud stress of the voice." It is plain that *the*, *in* and *a* are about the least important words in the lines in which they occur, and that in the first two lines *the* is intentionally prefixed to the important words *quick* and *rent* in order to give them additional emphasis. In technical language *the* is here a 'proclitic'; so far from laying any stress upon it, a good reader would pass it over more lightly than any other word in the lines. I am unable therefore to see the propriety of describing these as accented syllables, unless, when we use the term metrical accent, we simply mean that

the syllables, which are said to be metrically accented, are those which, if the verse were mechanically regular, would have had a word-accent, and to which therefore the general influence of the rhythm may seem to impart a sort of shadow of the word-accent. As far as the reading goes, accentuation on this principle becomes unmeaning, and the only thing to regard is emphasis, or the distinction between the emphatic and unemphatic syllables. All verses will be perfectly regular as regards accents (or feet), but variety will be produced by the over-riding emphasis. This is a simple and logical view, but, as we shall see, it is not consistently adhered to.

Thus in *S. G.* § 457, where the question is raised, whether 'an unemphatic monosyllable is allowed to stand in an emphatic place and receive the accent', it is stated that the article seems to have been regarded as capable of more emphasis in Shakespeare's time than it is now; but still attempts are made to explain away several of the instances in which *the* and still more *a* are found in the even syllables of the verse, and would therefore, on the mechanical principle, receive the accent. Thus in the line which Dr Abbott scans

a devil | a bor|n dev|il on | whose na|ture,

but which I should scan

a dev|il a | born dev|il on | whose na|ture,

the accent on *a* is avoided by assigning two syllables to *born* and one syllable to the first *devil*; and, in the following lines, it is suggested that an accented *the* may be avoided by the free admission of trisyllabic feet (both anapaest and amphibrach), and by giving two syllables to *dead*, three syllables to *lightenings*, and four to *physician*.

Your breath | first kindled | the de|ad coal | of war |  
Than meet | and join | Jove's light|enings | the precúr|sors  
More neéds she | the divíne | thán the | physicián |

I do not deny that monosyllables, in which *r* follows a vowel, are often disyllabized in Shakespeare (cf. *S. G.* §§ 480, 485, and my chapter on the Metre of Shakespeare), but I have great doubts as to some other monosyllables treated of in §§ 481—484,

and 486; and I think that, in the instances which follow, it was the desire for regularity of accentuation which prompted the scansion adopted, or at any rate allowed, by Dr Abbott; e.g. in the line

How in | my strength | you please | for you Ed|mund,  
*you* is divided unnecessarily to escape a final trochee.

To fail in the | disposing of | these chan|ces.

Here, in order to avoid an unaccented second foot, *fail* is made disyllabic, and a supernumerary unaccented syllable is assigned to the second foot.

•

Doth com|fort thee in | thy slep live | and flou|rish.

The second foot should end with *thee*, *thy* is emphatic, contrasting the sleep of Henry with the troubled dreams of Richard.

Full fif|teen hundred | besi|des com|mon men |.

*Besides* is made trisyllabic to avoid an unaccented third foot.

Go to the | créating | a whó|le tribe | of sóps |.

Here the third foot is properly unaccented, the second is an anapaest ending with the second syllable of *creating*.

But could | be willing | to march on | to Cal|ais.

*March* made disyllabic, to avoid unaccented third foot.

Of Lion|el Duke | of Clarence | the thi|rd son |.

*Third* made disyllabic, to avoid unaccented fourth foot.

Yóu and | your crá|fts yóu | have craft|ed fair.

[The line (*Cor.* IV. 6. 118) is incomplete; it should run:

You and | your crafts | you've craft|ed fair | you've brought.]

The Go|ds not | the patric|ians make | it and |

*Gods* made disyllabic, to avoid the trochee in the second place.

With Ti|tus Larcus | a mo|st val|iant Ro|man.

*Most* made disyllabic, to avoid an unaccented third foot.

It is needless to point out the extreme harshness of rhythm which follows from this attempt to ignore the simple



fact that it is not necessary for all the feet to have what is called in the *Lessons* the emphatic accent, what I should rather call simply the accent, on the second syllable of the foot. But it will be noticed that in some of the lines quoted, the fiction of the regular metrical accent is abandoned: thus in

More needs she | the divine | than the | physic|ian|,

the accent of the fourth foot is placed on the former syllable *than* instead of on *the*. This irregularity comes under the head of Dr Abbott's *License of trochee*, of which he gives the following account (*Lessons*, § 138). "In the initial foot and after a pause, "in iambic metre, a trochee instead of an iamb is allowed. A "very slight pause in the dramatic and free iambic metres "justifies a trochee; even a long syllable, with the slight pause "necessary for its distinct pronunciation, is sufficient. But some "slight pause is necessary, and hence it may be laid down as a "rule in iambic metre that one trochee cannot follow another. "Milton's line

*Univers*al reproách far wórse to beár,

"would be a monstrosity if read with the usual accents. It is "far more likely that Milton pronounced the word, *un*versál, "perhaps influenced by the fact that the *i* is long in Latin<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> As Milton uses the word 'universal' in twenty other passages and always with the present pronunciation, I cannot think it at all likely that he follows the Latin quantity in this passage. There is only one verse (in *S.*

*Ag.* 175), which, if taken by itself, might tolerate the long *i*, but taken in connexion with the preceding lines, it is evident that the metre is anapaestic, requiring short *i*,

For him   I reckon not   in high   estate	iamb. 5
Whom long   descent   of birth	iamb. 3
Or the sphere   of fortune rais es;	anap. 8
But thee   whose strength   while vir tue was her mate	iamb. 5
Might have   subdued   the earth	iamb. 3
Univer sally crowned   with high est prai ses.	anap. 4

As I have shown below, the double trochee is a known peculiarity of Milton's verse, borrowed by him from the Italian. If however anyone finds it intolerable, I have no objection to treat it as a case of initial truncation. Thus scanned the line would run

Univer|sal reproách |

the 3rd foot being an anapaest. But, after all, it makes no difference in the reading. Whether we call the 1st foot a trochee or not, we can only make it rhythmical by placing on the 1st syllable and giving a very strong emphasis to the 3rd.

Another rule is that "a trochee in the middle of a verse must not follow an unemphatic accent," as it does in Milton's lines

Burned after them | to the | bottom|less pit|.  
Light from | above | from the | fountain | of light |.

The first remark which suggests itself on this, is that the principle of fictitious accentuation is here abandoned. The accent of the foot is declared to be reversed when the emphasis falls on the first instead of the second syllable. But if the metrical accent is to be determined by the real or natural stress given to each syllable by a good reader, it will be found necessary to admit other licences besides that of the trochee. The so-called unemphatic accent is no accent at all in this sense of the term, so that we shall find ourselves compelled to admit pyrrhics on the one hand, and on the other hand, since two emphatic syllables may come together in verse as well as prose, we shall find that there are natural spondees just as there are natural trochees<sup>1</sup>. It may be granted that the use of the trochee is generally confined within the limits specified, though I should have worded

<sup>1</sup> To test the frequency of these irregular feet in Shakespeare, I have been carefully through *Macbeth*, and I find there 175 spondees in all, distributed as follows: 20 in the first foot, 60 in the second, 19 in the third, 23 in the fourth, and 53 in the fifth. Of these 31 follow trochees, 75 follow pyrrhics, 40 come after a pause, and 29 are continuous after a long syllable. As examples of what I call spondees, I would mention the foot made up of the last syllable of an iamb and the first of a trochee, *e.g.*

Would cre|ate sol|diers make | our wom|en fight |  
that made up of an emphatic monosyllable and the first syllable of a trochee, *e.g.*

Sit, wor|thy friends | my lord | is of|ten thus |  
Promised | no less | to them|. *That trust|ed home*

or of two emphatic monosyllables,

Why do | you show | me this? | a fourth! *Start, eyes!* |  
especially where the emphasis is required to give the right sense, as

*But screw | your cou|rage to | the stick|ing place |*  
*Who wrought | with them | and all | things else | that might |*  
*Making | the green | one red,*

or for the sake of antithesis, *e.g.*

*That which | hath made | them drunk | hath made | me bold |*  
*Lest our | old robes | sit eas|ier than | our new |.*



the task is simple. But the admission of the trochee complicates matters. Even Dr Abbott hesitates (*E. L.* p. 159) whether in the line

The lone | couch of | his ev|erlas|ting sleep |

the second foot shall be called a trochee, or an iambus consisting of a long emphatic unaccented syllable followed by a short unemphatic accented syllable. So in p. 157 we have the line,

Proud to | catch cold | at a | Vene|tian door |

in which it is said to be doubtful whether *at a* should be considered a trochee or iambus. And many other instances occur.

The quantity of syllables seems to introduce a still further complication, as we are told (*E. L.* p. 168) that, though it has quite a secondary position in English metre, yet Shakespeare, Milton, &c., are fond of giving a special character to their rhythm by the introduction of long monosyllables without the metrical-accent, *e.g.*

O'er bog or steep, through strait, *rough*, dense, or rare,  
With head, *hands*, wings, or feet pursues his way.

Here *rough* and *hands* are treated by Dr Abbott simply as long syllables, but surely it is plain that their rhythmical weight is owing to their emphasis, and to the stop which follows them; otherwise *rough* in itself is no longer than *of*. However, I note this merely to point out that the pupil has here a fourth sort of stress to add to the three (emphasis and the two accents) before considered.

We go on now to the syllabic license in disyllabic verse. The license of defect, monosyllabic for disyllabic foot, is on the whole well treated in *S. G.* § 479 foll., except that, as we have seen, monosyllables are often unnecessarily disyllabized, in order to escape transference or omission of accent.

The syllabic license of excess may consist either in syllables supernumerary, not counted in the feet; or in syllables within the feet, which may be either more or less slurred, or distinctly pronounced. Of the first we read, *S. G.* § 454, "An extra syllable is frequently added before a pause, especially

at the end of a line, but also at the end of the second<sup>1</sup>, and, less frequently, of the third foot; rarely at the end of the fourth." And § 458, "Two extra syllables are sometimes allowed before a pause, especially at the end of a line."

It will be observed that these rules do not justify such scanning as we have had in the lines

To fail in the | dispos|ing of | these chances.  
Go to the | creat|ing | a who|le tribe | of fops|.

where the superfluous syllable appears without a pause, and (in the second line) at the close of the first as well as of the second foot. As to the general principle, while I am disposed to allow that an extra syllable is sometimes found at the close of the first section of a line which naturally divides into two sections, I see no reason for admitting it elsewhere, as for instance after the fourth foot. Dr Abbott gives two examples of the last from the *Tempest*, in which the trisyllabic foot is very common.

With all | my hon|ours on | my brother | whereon|.  
So dear | the love | my peo|ple bore me | nor set|.

Is there any objection to regarding both as final anapaests?

The account of trisyllabic metre in the *Lessons* § 143 foll. seems to me satisfactory so far as it goes, but I think confusion is caused in the *Grammar* by mixing up proper dactyls and

<sup>1</sup> The example given seems to me very doubtful,

But mine | own safeties | . You may | be right|ly just |.

Read with the context, it is evident that *you* is emphatic, and Mr A. J. Ellis would divide

But mine | own safe|ties. You | may be right|ly just |  
Whate|ver I | shall think |.

It is possible however that the initial *but* ought to be appended to the previous line, thus

Without | leave ta|king. I | pray you | let not |  
My jeal|ousies | be your | dishon|ours, but |  
Mine own | safeties |. You may | be right|ly just |.

So I had taken it in my paper read before the Philological Society, and I find Mr Roby scans it in the same way. Both the 2nd and 3rd feet would then be trochees.

anapaests with what would commonly be denominated *amphibrachs*, but which Dr Abbott describes as iambs with a superfluous unaccented syllable which has to be dropped or slurred in sound (*S.G.* § 456). I do not deny that words are often so rapidly pronounced in Shakespeare as to lose their full complement of syllables, *e.g.* the words *Prospero*, *parallel* and *being* may be so read in the following lines from the *Tempest* I. 2. 72,

And *Prospero* the | prime dúke | *being* so | reputed  
In dign|ity | and for | the lib|eral arts |  
Without | a *par|allel*, those | *being* all | my stud|y.

Dr Abbott has given a very full list of words which he thinks were so pronounced. But I do not think such a device helps much in the line already cited

Go to the | creating | a whole tribe | of fops|.

So divided, the second foot could be nothing but an amphibrach. On the other hand in the *Tempest* I. 2. 301,

Go make | thyself | *like a nymph* | o' the sea | be subject  
*To no sight* | but thine | and mine|

and in 1 *Henry VI.* I. 1. 95,

The duke | of *Alen|çon* flie|eth to | his side |,

the italicized feet can only be described as anapaests. In the *Lessons* § 136 Dr Abbott has no difficulty in allowing this in the case of Tennyson's

The sound | of man|y a heav|ily gall|oping hoof |

and, as he says in the same passage, that modern blank verse is, for the most part, more strict than that of Milton, and Milton is more strict than Shakespeare, in limiting himself to ten syllables in a line, why should he deny to Shakespeare the liberty he allows to the moderns? Why should he take such pains to get rid of anapaests and dactyls in the elder poet by elision, contraction, extra-metrical syllables and other expedients, which are plainly inapplicable in modern poetry? He does indeed, though with a groan, admit one anapaest of portentous harshness, which I think we are not bound to retain.

*Which most gib|ingly | ungrave|ly he | did fash|ion* *Cor.* II. 3. 233.

I should prefer to divide this and the preceding line as follows:

Th' apprehen|sion of | his pres|ent port|ance which |  
Most gi|bingly | ungrave|ly he | did fash|ion

The sequence dactyl-iamb (and *a fortiori* dactyl-anapaest) which Dr Guest, as we have seen, repudiates in Milton's line

*Ominous* | con|jec|ture on | the whole | success |

is equally opposed to Dr Abbott's rule that "we cannot have three consecutive clearly pronounced syllables without a metrical accent." Yet it is by no means uncommon in Tennyson, cf.

*Galloping* | of hor|ses o|ver the gras|sy plain |.  
*Petulant* | she spoke | and at | herself | she laughed |.  
*Modulate* | me soul | of min|cing mi|miery |.  
*Hammering* | and clink|ing chat|tering sto|ny names |.  
*Glorifying* clown | and sat|yr whence | they need |.  
*Timorous|ly* and as | the leader of | the herd |.

Perhaps the principle of slurring is carried a little too far, especially in the attempt to get rid of Alexandrines (*S.G.* § 495 ff.). No doubt Dr Abbott has succeeded in showing that many apparent Alexandrines are to be read as ten-syllable iambs, but I see no reason for objecting to the following, for instance:

That seem|ing to | be most | which we | indeed | least are |  
Acquire | too high | a fame | when him | we serve's | away |  
Besides | I like | you not|. If you | will know | my house |

Nor do I quite understand why such a line as the following should be called a trimeter couplet, rather than an Alexandrine,

Why ring | not out | the bells | aloud | throughout | the town |.

I shall not carry further my examination of Dr Abbott's system. As a critic of Shakespeare he seems to me to be too anxious to reduce every line to the normal shape. No doubt he allows many broken lines; but I think he goes too far in endeavouring to raise the following, for instance, to the full number of syllables by disyllabizing *will* and *fare*:

Why then | I will. Fa|rewell | old Gaunt |.

Surely it is better to suppose the actor to supply the want of the missing syllable, or syllables, by the pause which marks the change of subject, than to dwell on such a monosyllable as *will*.

Again, as regards the heroic verse generally, I think Dr Abbott is too anxious to limit and regulate any departure from the normal accentuation, and that, in treating of syllabic license, he is too much disposed to disguise or explain away examples of trisyllabic feet by the various devices already referred to, and especially by, what seems to me, the somewhat desperate remedy of allowing extra-metrical syllables in any part of the line. If the superfluous syllable is ever allowed within the line, it must be after the section or hemistich, because we know that it was the law of the Old English and French poetry, with which our modern heroic is historically connected, to admit the feminine ending in the middle, as well as at the end of the line<sup>1</sup>. Yet even in Shakespeare it is very difficult to find an indisputable instance of this. Dr Abbott sends me the following, but it is quite possible to divide them so as to ignore the section altogether, giving an anapaest in the 3rd foot of the former and the 4th foot of the latter, thus

To lack | discretion. Come, go | we to | the King |

*Hamlet* II. 1. 117.

To feed | and clothe | thee. Why | should the poor | be flat|tered ?

*Hamlet* III. 1. 64.

My own feeling is that, dactyls and anapaests being recognized English feet, and both undoubtedly employed in the place of iambs by our poets of all ages, it is wiser to use them, where they will serve, to explain the metre of a verse, rather than to have recourse to extra-metrical syllables, a license which, except at the end of the line, is now unknown, and is not recognized by all even in Shakespeare. On the same ground I should be very chary of admitting the amphibrach, as the substitute for an iamb, because it is never, as far as I know, made the basis of any English poem, and, though I see no objection to its use, I cannot call to mind any instance of a heroic line which may not be explained without it.

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix at the end of the chapter.



I must not however close my remarks on Dr Abbott without bearing my witness to the great services which he has rendered to all students of English poetry. There is plenty of room for diversity of opinion in dealing with the refinements and subtleties of a subject so hard to fix as metre, but none can dispute the judgment, the acuteness and the laborious industry exhibited in the two volumes on which I have been commenting.

[Dr Abbott has kindly looked through this chapter and authorizes me to say that, while retaining his old view as to the not unfrequent disyllabization of such words as *year*, *fire*, *say*, *pale*, in Shakespeare, he finds himself in general agreement with me as to the scansion of the particular lines quoted. The scansions given were in some cases suggested by him as possibilities which he is now disposed to reject. In regard to an accented 'the', he would wish to limit himself to the statement, that the metrically accented 'the' usually precedes a monosyllable which is long, in other words, precedes a spondee. He has no objection to recognize dactyls and anapaests, but considers that they are for the most part restricted to certain collocations of syllables, or pauses.]

#### APPENDIX BY MR H. NICOL ON THE OLD FRENCH DECASYLLABIC METRE.

Extract from M. Gaston Paris's edition of *La Vie de Saint Alexis*, poème du XI<sup>e</sup> siècle (Paris, 1872), p. 131 :—

"Le vers a dix syllabes au *minimum* ; il peut en avoir onze ou douze si l'hémistiche<sup>1</sup> et le vers ont une terminaison féminine. Il y a donc quatre types : 1° vers de dix syllabes, masculins à l'hémistiche et à la rime : || *Ja mais | n'iert tels || com fût | as an|ceisôrs* || ; 2° vers de onze syllabes, masculins à l'hémistiche, féminins à la rime : || *Sor toz | ses përs || l'amât | li em|perédrè* || ; 3° vers de onze syllabes, féminins à l'hémistiche, masculins à la

<sup>1</sup> "Cette dénomination est admise, bien qu'à la rigueur elle soit inexacte."

rime: || *Enfant* | *nos donè* || *qui séit* | *a ton* | *talént* ||; 4° vers de douze syllabes, féminins à l'hémistiche et à la rime: || *Donc li* | *remembrèt* || *de son* | *seindr* | *celéstè* ||. Le vers est donc un *décasyllabe*, pouvant avoir une syllabe de plus, nécessairement atone, après la quatrième et après la dixième... Le *décasyllabe* apparaît pour la première fois dans le poème de Boèce, où il a exactement le même caractère que dans le nôtre; c'est aussi le vers du *Roland* et de la plupart des anciennes chansons de geste. Le vers est toujours très-exactement fait, et toutes les syllabes comptent:...pour savoir ...la juste mesure il faut tenir compte des cas où se produit l'*élision*."

I have marked the feet and hemistich; and put an acute over the accented words and syllables, a grave over the extra unaccented syllable. M. Paris does not state—it being generally known—that the second syllable of the second and fifth feet must be accented. Words ending in a syllable with unaccented *e* have the accent on the one before it; all others on the last. The accents in the other feet (always disyllabic) are not fixed; the cesura is always after the second foot.

The poem on Boethius is of the tenth century, and is the oldest Provençal work of which a fragment has been preserved; here are two lines (from Bartsch's *Chrestomathie Provençale*, 2° édition, Elberfeld, 1868, p. 1):

Pro non | es gáigrè||, si pe|nedén | za 'n prén||.  
No cre|dét déu|| lo nós|tre cre|ator||.

There are no feminine rhymes; in the first example the *e* of *en* is elided after the preceding *a*.

The *Chanson de Roland* is eleventh century, rather later than the *Alexis*, and its versification is just the same (Th. Müller's edition of the Oxford MS., Göttingen, 1863, p. 1, 2):

Cárles | li réis||, nóstre em|peré|re mágnè||.  
Il en | apélèt|| e ses | dúx e | ses cúntès||.  
Blancan|drins fút|| des plus | sáives | paíéns||.  
De vas|selágè|| fut | a|séz che|valér||.

The first of these has the unaccented *e* of *nostre* elided before the following vowel, as usual.

[Prof. Paul Meyer of Paris has most kindly sent me the following remarks in reference to some queries made as to the above. ‘

“The short paragraph of G. Paris, with H. Nicol’s additions, does not profess to give a complete idea of the French decasyllabic verse, but is correct, so far as it goes. In French versification there is no fixed place for the accent except at the end of the line and, in long verses, about the middle of the line. There are three distinct forms of the decasyllabic verse, (1) that in which the accents fall on the 4th and 10th syllables, (2) that in which they fall on the 5th and 10th, (3) that in which they fall on the 6th and 10th. These forms are never found combined in one poem, as they are in the Italian, where the hendecasyllable may have the middle accent on the 4th or on the 6th syllable indifferently in the same poem. The Alexandrine verse has always the accent on the 6th and 12th syllables. In lines under ten syllables no accent has a fixed place but the one which marks the end of the verse, always admitting an unaccented syllable after it (the feminine rime). Very ancient French poetry does however admit generally an accent on the 4th syllable in octosyllabic verse (see G. Paris in *Romania* I. 294). But this accent on the 4th syllable of the octosyllabic verse does not require a pause after it, as would be the case in longer verses.

“That Shakespeare’s verse has its origin in the French decasyllabic verse was proved long ago by Zarncke, the Leipzig professor, in his essay *Ueber den fünffussiger Iambus mit besonderer Rücksicht auf seine Behandlung durch Lessing, Schiller und Goethe* (Leipzig, 1865).”]

## CHAPTER IV.

### AESTHETIC INTUITIVISM.

MR J. A. SYMONDS.

I HAVE spoken of the mischief arising from the confusion between the aesthetic and the scientific views of metre. Each is good in its place, but they should be kept distinct, and the scientific examination should come first. Otherwise metrical analysis shares in all the difficulties of aesthetic analysis, and is in danger of becoming to a great extent a matter of individual feeling. As an example of this aesthetic or intuitivist way of regarding metrical questions, I will take an article on the Blank Verse of Milton written by Mr J. A. Symonds, which appeared in the *Fortnightly* for Dec. 1874. I give his system in his own words slightly condensed. "English blank verse consists of "periods of lines, each one of which is made up normally of ten "syllables, so disposed that five beats occur at regular intervals, "giving the effect of an iambic rhythm. Johnson was wrong "in condemning deviation from this ideal structure as inharmonious. It is precisely such deviation that constitutes the "beauty of blank verse. A verse may often have more than ten "syllables, and more or less than five accents, but it must carry "so much sound as shall be a satisfactory equivalent for ten "syllables, and must have its accents arranged so as to content "an ear prepared for five."

So far we may say all metrists, with perhaps the single exception of Dr Guest, would be agreed: the question is how we are to interpret the vague phrase "satisfactory equivalent," but we shall seek in vain for anything more definite in the

course of Mr Symonds' article. We have a good deal of eloquent declamation about the "balance and proportion of syllables," "the massing of sounds so as to produce a whole harmonious to the ear, but beyond the reach of analysis by feet." We are told that in order to understand the rhythm of the line—

'Tis true, I am that spirit unfortunate—

"it was necessary to have heard and seen the fiend as Milton "heard and saw him. Johnson, with eyes fixed on the ground, "searching for iambs, had not gazed on the fallen archangel's "face, nor heard the low slow accents of the first two syllables, "the proud emphasis upon the fourth, the stately and melancholy "music-roll which closed the line." [With equal justice Mr Symonds might protest against the profanation of attempting to give a grammatical or rhetorical analysis of a speech of Demosthenes.] Again, "spasms of intense emotion have "to be imagined in order to give its metrical value to the "verse,—

Me, me only, just object of his ire,"

and so on.

In fact Mr Symonds distinctly asserts what I should call the principle of aesthetic intuitivism in the words "the one "sound rule for readers is—Attend strictly to the sense and the "pauses: the lines will then be perfectly melodious; but if you "attempt to scan the lines on any preconceived metrical system, "you will violate the sense and vitiate the music." I need not repeat the objections to this view, which have been already fully stated in my introductory chapter. Suffice it to say that it renders impossible the classification and comparison of metrical effects, and encourages the delusion that poetry is subject to no rules and admits of no science. If nothing more were wanted than that the casual reader should be satisfied or gratified by his own recitation of a poem, what security should we have against misprints and false readings being treated as rhythmical, as in the instances quoted from Dr Guest's book in a former chapter? What is there to prevent Milton's heroic

Universal reproach far worse to bear

from being read as a four-foot iambic commencing with two anapaests? Or why should Mr Symonds take the trouble to argue that certain lines containing twelve syllables ought not to be regarded as Alexandrines, if the line will be perfectly melodious when read according to the sense and the pauses without any preconceived metrical system? The same confusion between the scientific and the aesthetic view appears in the assumption that those who maintain the value of metrical analysis, *i.e.* of scansion, would also maintain that the reading of the line should be determined merely by its scansion, and not by its meaning. And apparently the writer thinks that this was the case with classical versification. He allows that "such terms as trochee and amphibrach may be usefully employed between students employed in metrical analysis," that "our daily speech is larded with trochees and cretics and so forth:" on the other hand,\* "since quantity forms no part of our prosody, and since the licenses of quantity in blank verse can never have been determined, it is plainly not much to the purpose to talk about choriamb in Milton—though they are undoubtedly to be found there—but these names of classic feet do not explain the secret of the varied melody of Milton;" "they do not solve the problem of blank verse."

It is difficult to deal with the mass of inconsistencies in these lines: first it is stated that trochees, etc., exist in English, and that the terms may be usefully employed by students for the purpose of analyzing English metre, and then again we are told that since quantity does not enter into our prosody, therefore it is useless to talk of choriamb and classic feet in Milton, though he has them. Not to dwell upon this, the writer is evidently contrasting quantitative and accentual metre, and deprecates the use of classical terms as not explaining the secret of the varied melody of the latter. But who ever asserted or supposed that Virgil's melody was *explained* by the mere naming of the feet or the scanning of the lines? Even a school-boy in saying his lines is corrected if he scans them instead of reciting them with the proper accent and emphasis; even a schoolboy in writing his Latin verses knows that it is only a small portion of his task to produce lines that will construe and

scan. Lines may construe and scan, and yet be utterly inadmissible, and even when he has learnt to produce a decent line; he is told that he is to notice how Virgil varies his rhythm by the position of the caesura, by the prevalence of spondees or dactyls, by the length of the clauses and periods. Mr Symonds seems to think it an objection to the scanning of English verse, that the metrical feet will not always coincide with the natural pauses in the sense, but so far from this being an objection in Latin poetry, it is the actual rule that they should not in general coincide. No doubt the scanning of Virgil is an easy thing, and the scanning of Shakespeare and Milton is a hard thing, but I see no reason for saying that scanning is more necessary or useful in the case of the one than of the other, unless we are prepared to maintain that there is absolutely no rule at all observed in the English heroic. The scanning of Plautus is just as hard as that of Virgil is easy, and hard for the same reason as the scanning of English verse is hard, because syllables may be slurred in rapid pronunciation, because the metrical value of many of the syllables is not fixed, as it was in later Latin, and because the alternative feet are so numerous. Thus the place of an iambus may be taken by a trochee, a tribrach, a spondee, an anapaest, a dactyl, Wagner would say, even a proceleusmatic (see his Introduction to the *Aulularia*). But no one on this account thinks scanning superfluous in Plautus. On the contrary, whilst the scanning of Virgil is left to those who are commencing their studies in Latin verse, the scansion of Plautus has occupied the attention of the ablest scholars from Bentley to Ritschl; and the result is that a metre, of which even Cicero confessed that he could make nothing, is now intelligible to any ordinary reader. This is a case in which the scientific metrical analysis preceded and rendered possible the aesthetic analysis, and so I believe it has been and will be in other cases.

We found an inconsistency just now between the statement that the classical terminology might be usefully employed in reference to English metre by students accustomed to metrical analysis, and the subsequent statement that, since quantity formed no part of our prosody, these classical names were only misleading. Further on we are told that, in English blank

verse, "scansion by time takes the place of scansion by metrical feet; the bars of the musical composer, where different values from the breve to the demi-semi-quaver find their place, suggest a truer basis of measurement than the longs and shorts of classic feet." If this is to be taken literally, while every foot should occupy the same time to pronounce, it may consist of any number of syllables from one to thirty-two. Getting rid of hyperbole, let us say, from one to four, and consider what degree of truth there is in the statement. It is difficult to see what connexion there can be between such a metre as this and those with which Milton's verse is historically connected, the later metre of Dryden, and the earlier metre of Surrey, Sackville, Greene, and Peele, who are said to have shown "great hesitation as to any departure from iambic regularity".<sup>1</sup> It is difficult also to see how such terms as "trochee and amphibrach" can be usefully employed by students engaged in the analysis" of such a metre. But leaving this, is it true that each foot occupies the same time; *e.g.* in what Mr Symonds calls the ponderous

Showers, hails, snows, frosts, and two-edged winds that prime  
and in what he calls the light and rapid

Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts

is it not palpable that the spondee 'showers, hails,' takes longer to pronounce than the trochee 'Athens'? Again, is it true that we ever find a foot corresponding to a breve in which the whole time is occupied with one syllable? I should say that in cases where one syllable stands for the foot, it corresponds rather to the semibreve with a pause. The syllable by itself only supplies half the foot. Is it true that there may be more than three syllables in a foot? This too I should deny. If there is any apparent case of such a thing, I should say that one or more syllables have suffered elision or slurring, the *apoggiatura* of music. And lastly is it, as seems to be implied, a matter of indifference on which syllable in the bar or foot the accent falls? If there are three syllables, is it the same thing

<sup>1</sup> How little this is true of Surrey will appear below in ch. viii.



whether the accent falls on the first, second, or third of these? I cannot think we shall gain much from 'this scansion by time.'

There still remain two points for consideration, the one the inconsistent results obtained by the old metrists, the other the challenge offered to explain certain lines of Milton by the ordinary scanning. To show the inconsistencies of the old metrists we are told that in the line

Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground

the last four syllables were made a choriambic by Todd and a dactyl with a demifoot by Brydges. I am not concerned to defend either, and in fact both have gone beyond the limits of scientific metrical analysis, through a wish to suggest the general rhythmical effect. The first business of the metrist is to give the bare fact that we have in this line an accented seventh followed by an unaccented eighth syllable, making what is commonly called a trochee, and again an unaccented ninth followed by an accented tenth, commonly called an iamb. Todd is not wrong in saying that the two together constitute a choriamb, only that, to be consistent, he should very much enlarge his terminology and have a name ready for any possible collocation of two feet. Brydges, on the other hand, is altogether on the wrong tack, and opens the door to any sort of license.

We come now to the lines which are said to be beyond the reach of analysis by feet. I give what I consider the true scanning of each.

Ruining | along | the illim|itab|le inane|

First dactyl, second iamb, third slurred iamb, or anapaest, according to the pleasure of the reader, fourth iamb, fifth same as the third.

The one wind|ing the oth|er straight | and left | between |

First slurred spondee, second slurred iamb, the rest iambs.

See where | Christ's blood | streams in | the fir|ment |

First trochee, second spondee, third trochee, fourth and fifth iambs. The third foot is said to be "illegitimate according

to iambic scansion," but this is so only according to narrow *a priori* systems such as Johnson's. The limit of trochaic variation will be discussed further on.

'Tis true | I am | that spirit | unfor|tunate |

First, second, fourth, fifth iambs, third slurred iamb, or if the reader pleases to pronounce both syllables of 'spirit' distinctly, the last syllable would make the fourth foot an anapaest

Me me | only | just ob|ject of | his ire |

First spondee, second trochee, third spondee, fourth pyrrhic, fifth iamb. Of this line it is said, "It is obvious here that scansion by feet will be of little use, but the line is understood as soon as we allow the time of two whole syllables to the first emphatic 'me,' and bring over the next words 'me only' in the time of another two syllables." If it is meant that scansion by feet will not of itself tell us how to read the line, of course, I agree; but if it is implied that whenever the second syllable of the line is joined closely in sense with what follows it is to be reckoned as forming part of the second foot, then I say that we destroy the foundation of metre. Nor do I recognize any given time for two syllables. I do not see why a reader should not give as much time to the first 'me' as to the four last syllables of the line.

Mr Symonds continues, "The truth of this method is still more evident when we take for analysis a line at first singularly inharmonious.

Submit | he reared | me and whom | thou soughtest | I am |

Try to scan this line, and it seems a confusion of uncertain feet." The feet are all iambs but the third, which may be read either as slurred iamb or as anapaest.

To avoid any possible misconception, I repeat again that I find no fault with Mr Symonds for what he has done, but for what he has failed to do, and condemned others for doing. His aesthetic analysis may be excellent in itself, but it cannot take the place of the scientific analysis, nor is there the least inconsistency between them. By all means let Mr

Symonds 'gaze on the archangel's face and hear his stately and melancholy music-roll,' but why should that interfere with Johnson's humble search for iambs? I venture to say that, as a rule, the ear which has been first purged by listening for iambs will be better prepared to receive those higher aesthetic pleasures of which Mr Symonds discourses so eloquently.

## CHAPTER V.

### NATURAL OR A-POSTERIORI SYSTEM.

•MR A. J. ELLIS. MR MASSON. MR KEIGHTLEY.

INTERMEDIATE between the rigid *a priori* systems of Dr Guest and Dr Abbott, and the anarchical no-system of the Intuitivists, comes what I should call the natural or *a posteriori* system of which Mr A. J. Ellis may be regarded as a representative. I am glad to be able to give Mr Ellis' theory of the heroic verse in his own words slightly abbreviated from a paper read before the Philological Society in June 1876. He commences with a quotation from the *Essentials of Phonetics*, p. 76, published by him in 1848 but long out of print.

“An English heroic verse is usually stated to consist of ten syllables. It is better divided into five groups, [what we commonly call *feet*, what Mr Ellis prefers to call measures] each of which theoretically consists of two syllables, of which the second only is accented. The theoretical English verse is therefore 01, 01, 01, 01, 01 (0 = absence, 1 = presence of stress); but this normal form is very seldom found. Practically, many of the groups are allowed to consist of three syllables, two of them being unaccented; but in these cases the syllable immediately preceding is very strongly accented. The number of syllables may therefore be greater than ten, while the accents may be, and most generally are, less than five. It is necessary for an English verse of this description, that there should be an accent at the end of the third and fifth group, or at the end of the second and fourth; and if either of these requisites is complied with, other accents may be distributed almost at pleasure.

The last group may also have one or two unaccented syllables after its last accent. Much of the beauty of a verse arises from the proper distribution of the pauses between the words, and also of the groups of accents among the groups of words. Thus the second or third group, or measure, must in general be divided, that is, must be distributed between two words, or the effect on the ear will not be harmonious."

Mr Ellis then gives the first sixteen lines of *Paradise Lost*, denoting the degree of stress laid on each syllable by the figures 2, 1, 0 written underneath, the divisions of the feet being marked by commas.

1. Of man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
0 2, 1 0, 0 2, 0 0 0, 0 2
2. Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
0 1, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2, 0 2
3. Brought death into the world, and all our woe  
1 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2
4. With loss of Eden, till one greater man  
0 1, 0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 2
5. Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,  
0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 2, 0 2
6. Sing, heavenly Muse, that, on the secret top  
2 2, 0 0 2, 1 0, 0 2, 0 1
7. Of Horeb or of Sinai, didst inspire  
0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 0 1, 0 2
8. That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed  
1 2, 0 0, 0 2 2, 0 2, 0 2
9. In the beginning, how the heavens and earth  
0 0, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2, 0 0 2
10. Rose out of chaos. Or, if Zion hill  
2 0, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2, 0 2
11. Delight thee more; and Siloa's brook that flows  
0 2, 0 2, 0 2, 0 0 2, 0 2
12. Fast by the oracles of God, I thence  
2 0, 0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 1 2
13. Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song:  
0 2, 0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 0 2
14. That with no middle flight intends to soar  
0 0, 2 2, 0 2, 0 2, 0 2
15. Above the Aonian mount, while it pursues  
0 1, 0 2, 0 2, 2 0, 0 2
16. Things unattempted yet, in prose or rhyme  
2 0, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2, 0 2

"In these sixteen lines, there is not one with a superfluous syllable at the end of the line, but lines 1, 6, 7, 9, 11 and 13 have eleven syllables, and line 15 has as many as twelve

syllables. There are several groups, therefore, of more than two syllables, some groups of two, and one (in the first line) of three unaccented syllables. Sometimes a group has two accents, as in lines 6, 8, 14. Lines 1, 3, 5, 7, 8, 15, owe their rhythm to accents at the end of the third and fifth groups; lines 2, 4, 6, 9, 10, 12, 13, 16, to accents at the end of the second and fourth groups; and both characteristics are united in lines 11, 14. The mode in which these necessary conditions are diversified, by the introduction of other and unexpected accents, or by the omission of accents, is very remarkable, and shews the art and rhythmical feeling of the poet. So far from the theoretical standard, 01, 01, 01, 01, 01, being of constant recurrence, we only find one line (the second) in which it is strictly observed; and even then we have to assume that subaccents have the same effect on the ear as primary accents, which is far from being the case. Line 11, in spite of the three syllables in the fourth group, approaches the theoretical standard nearer than any other verse, and it is immediately succeeded by line 12, which, as a contrast, goes miles away from the standard form.

"At a later period, in my *Early English Pronunciation*, Part I., 1869, pp. 333—5, I made some passing remarks on Chaucer's rhythm as different from the modern, and I laid down my modern tests with a few variations, thus:

"In the modern verse of five measures, there must be a principal stress on the last syllable of the second and fourth measures; or of the first and fourth measures; or of the third and some other measure. There is also generally a stress upon the last syllable of the fifth measure; but if any one of the three conditions above stated is satisfied, the verse, so far as stress is concerned, is complete, no matter what other syllables have a greater or less stress or length. The length of syllables has much to do with the force and character of a verse, but does not form part of its rhythmical laws. It is a mistake to suppose that there are commonly or regularly five stresses, one to each measure. Take, for example, the first six lines of Lord Byron's *Corsair*, marking the even measures by italics, and the relative amount of stress by 0, 1, 2, we have—

1. O'er the *glad* waters of the *dark* blue sea  
1 0, 1 2, 0, 0, 0 2, 1 2
2. Our thoughts *as boundless* and *our souls* as free,  
1 1, 0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 2
3. Far *as the breeze* can bear, *the billows* foam,  
2 0, 0 1, 0 2, 0 1, 0 2
4. Survey *our empire*, and *behold* our home!  
0 1, 0 2, 0 0, 0 2, 0 2
5. These are *our realms*, no limits to their sway—  
2 0, 0 1, 2 1, 0 0, 0 2
6. Our flag *the sceptre* all *who meet* obey  
1 2, 0 2, 0 1, 1 2, 0 2

"The distribution of stress is seen to be very varied, but the action of the rules given in the text is well marked. Different readers would probably differ in the ratios 1 and 2, in some lines, and others might think that it would be sufficient to mark stress and no stress. The last line most nearly approaches to having five principal stresses.

"Our English verse, though based on alterations of force, is materially governed by length and pause, is seldom or never unaccompanied by variety of pitch unknown in prose, and is more than all perhaps governed by weight, which is due to expression and mental conceptions of importance, and is distinct from force, length, pitch, and pause or silence; but results partly from expression in delivery (a very different thing from mere emphasis), produced by quality of tone and gliding pitch, with often actual weakness of tone, and partly from the mental effect of the constructional predominance of conceptions, as of substantives over adjectives, and verbs over adverbs, even when the greater force or emphasis is given to the lighter words. Weight is a very complex phenomenon, therefore, which certainly affects English rhythm in a remarkable manner at times, entirely crossing the rules of force or strength. We want, therefore, a nomenclature which shall distinguish degrees of force, length, pitch, and weight in syllables, and in groups of syllables so affected, and of degrees of duration of silence. Our rhythms are thus greatly more complicated than the classical, so far as we can appreciate them, except the dithyrambic and the comic, which as Cicero felt, required music. (*Orator*. § 183-4, quōs cum cantū spoliāveris nūda pacne remanēt ōrātiō.)

"I have elaborated a series of expressions for degrees of force, length, pitch, weight, and silence, which will in some way avoid the great ambiguities, and indeed contradictions, which occur in the use of the words *accent* and *emphasis* among writers on rhythm. These are as follows. Nine degrees are distinguished, representable by the numbers 1, the smallest, to 9, the greatest. But of these three are principal, each having a super- and sub-form.

FORCE.	LENGTH.	PITCH.	WEIGHT.	SILENCE.
9. superstrong	superlong	superhigh	superheavy	supergreat
8.— <i>strong</i> —	<i>long</i> —	<i>high</i> —	<i>heavy</i> —	<i>great</i>
7. substrong	sublong	subhigh	subheavy	subgreat
6. supermean	supermedial	supermiddle	supermoderate	supermedium
5.— <i>mean</i> —	<i>medial</i> —	<i>middle</i> —	<i>moderate</i> —	<i>medium</i>
4. submean	submedial	submiddle	submoderate	submedium
3. superweak	supershort	superlow	superlight	supersmall
2.— <i>weak</i> —	<i>short</i> —	<i>low</i> —	<i>light</i> —	<i>small</i>
1. subweak	subshort	sublow	sublight	subsmall

"For all practical purposes the three principal degrees suffice, but fewer will not serve. I have found it of great practical advantage to be able to speak of a *strong* syllable, quite independently of the origin of its strength, which may arise from its position as an accented syllable in polysyllables, or from its emphatic pronunciation in a monosyllable. Thus we may say that English rhythm is primarily governed by alterations and groups of strong and weak syllables, and that it is materially influenced by alternations and groups of long and short, high and low, heavy and light syllables, and great and small pauses. The names of these groups would require great care to be sufficiently intelligible, and I have not yet attempted to work them out. As English verse would have, however, to be studied in reference to all of them, it is very easy to express a group of syllables by the initials F, L, P, W, S, and the corresponding figures. Thus what used to be called an accentual iambus will assume any of the forms F 19, 29, 39, 49, 59, 69, 79, 89; or F 18, 28, 38, 48, 58, 68, 78; or F 17, 27, 37, 47, 57, 67; or F 16, 26, 36, 46, 56; or F 15, 25, 35, 45; or F 14, 24, 34; or F 13, 23; or F 12; and very subtle ears might be ready



to appreciate all these forms, although the forms F 28, 58, 25 would be all that might be generally reckoned. But in such groups we might also have L 28, 58, 25; P 28, 58, 25; and W 28, 58, 25. Thus F 28 + W 28, and F 28 + W 58, would have very different effects, and new effects would be introduced by the distribution of the syllables in a group among different words and the length of the corresponding silences, if any, no silence not being marked. It will be found not easy to take note of all these peculiarities in reading a piece of poetry. Joshua Steele and James Rush tried much this way, see my paper on Accent and Emphasis, *Philological Transactions* 1873-4, pp. 129-132. Steele attended to length and silence in one, under the name of time, and distributed them so as to divide speech, in prose or verse, into equal intervals of time, answering to musical *bars*; he especially noted pitch, and also force, not however as here employed, but as part of expression, and hence forming part of weight, and corresponding to the crescendos and diminuendos of music, and in fact the whole apparatus of oratory. What is here meant by force he calls weight, and makes it agree so completely with the beating of a conductor of music, that he assigns weight to silences.

"When merely two grades are necessary, the long vowel, implying a long syllable, has the long mark, as *sēat*; the long syllable with a short vowel may have the short mark over the vowel, as *strēngth*; short vowels and syllables are unmarked. Strong syllables have a turned period (·) after a long vowel, as *rē·gion*, or the consonant following a short vowel, as *wrē·tch·ed*; weak syllables are unmarked. High syllables have an acute accent over the short vowel in short syllables, as *cánō*, or after the vowel bearing the long or short mark in long syllables, as *cā'nō*, *cā'nto*. The glide down from a high pitch to a low one, always on a long vowel, is marked by the circumflex, as *vā·me*. The glide up from a low pitch to a high one, also always on a long vowel, is marked by a grave accent on the vowel followed by an acute accent after it, as Norwegian *dā'g*. The low pitch is unmarked. But a grave accent marks a still lower pitch. Heavy syllables are in italics, light syllables unmarked. Emphasis as affecting a whole word is represented by (·) placed

before the whole word, and will mark any peculiarity of expression by which it is indicated in speech. Silence, when not marked by the usual points or dashes, or in addition to these, is denoted by (o), a turned mark of degrees, for small, and (0), a turned zero, for long silences. Odd measures end with |, and even measures with ]. By this means all the principal points of rhythm can be easily marked by ordinary types.

"From the above it will be seen how minute are my own notions of rhythm as actually practised by poets in a developed state of literature, not those who had to struggle with singsong doggrel, as in much of our oldest rhymes. This also shews in what sense I consider the old classical terms "misleading"—principally, as now used, in studying classical metres with modern prepossessions,—and also as utterly insufficient for English purposes.

"I will conclude by appending a few lines which I have put together for the sole purpose of contrasting irregularities with regularities. Lines in strange rhythms would never be so accumulated and contrasted in practice. I mark them for force only below, but roughly for length, pitch, weight, silence, and measure, in the text, and add remarks.

1. In the | bläck· sky'·] glím·mërs | the pä'le] cōld mōōn.  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 2 & & 6 & & 8 & 8 & 2 & & 2 & 6 & 6 & 8 \end{array}$
2. Sād· ghō'st | of nī'ght,·] and the stā'rs | twīn'klē] arōūnd  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 6 & 5 & & 2 & 6 & & 2 & 2 & 8 & & 7 & 2 & 2 & 6 \end{array}$   
or,  $\begin{array}{cccccccc} 2 & 2 & & 7 & & 8 & 2 & 2 & 6 \end{array}$
3. Trēm·bling | spān'glēs·] set· in | her dā'rk] gāuze vēi'  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 6 & 2 & & 5 & 2 & & 5 & 2 & & 5 & 8 \end{array}$
4. Pä'le quēē'n, | pū're quēē'n,] dū'll· quēē'n, | forlō'rn] quēē'n; ā'yeo  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 5 & 6 & & 5 & 6 & & 7 & 5 & & 5 & 8 & & 9 \end{array}$
5. Giv'e me | the sō'cial glōw, | the brī'ght] cōā'·, theō  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 7 & 2 & & 2 & 8 & & 2 & 7 & & 2 & 7 & & 2 \end{array}$
6. Fit·ful]ly gē'nial flā·me,0 | lī'ghting] ēa'ch chēē'k,  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 6 & 2 & 2 & 7 & 2 & 2 & 7 & & 8 & 5 & & 5 & 8 \end{array}$
7. Gū'ding | ēa'ch smī'le], brī'ghtsome | accōm·]paniment  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 8 & 5 & & 5 & 8 & & 8 & 3 & & 2 & 8 & 1 & 2 & 2 \end{array}$
8. Of brī'ght]some mēl'ody rīng'ing from brī'ght]some hēarts.  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 8 & & 8 & 3 & 2 & 8 & & 8 & & 8 & & 8 \end{array}$
9. The rig'id | lī'ne] encō'sed | in rig'id rū'les,  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 7 & 2 & 7 & & 2 & 7 & & 1 & 7 & 2 & 7 \end{array}$
10. As dū'll· | as stāg'nant wā'ter,0 dū'll's] the mī'nd  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 1 & 8 & & 1 & 8 & & 1 & 7 & & 1 & 8 & & 2 & 7 \end{array}$
11. That lōng's | to frē·] itself· | from hā'rs[h] contrō'l.  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 1 & 8 & & 1 & 8 & & 2 & 7 & & 1 & 7 & & 2 & 8 \end{array}$

12. And, in | the vā'ried *rh'y'th* | m of hēa'rt] and sōu'1  
 8 1, 1 7, 2 7, 1 1 7, 1 8

13. Fēs'ls the | sūn'-gō'd',] trūe pō'esŷ's] trūe' kŷng'  
 7 1, 8 7, 7 8 1 2 7 8

It will be at once evident that force is here very insufficient for marking the rhythm, and that length, weight and silence have much effect. The only regular lines are 9, 10, 11, and they have a singularly dull effect among the others. Some of the lines set all ordinary rules at naught, and some readers may take them, as Goethe's mother took Klopstock's Messiah, for "prose run mad." Line 1, an ordinary form, begins with two short and weak syllables, followed by two strong and long ones, of which the first, "bläck," has a short vowel and an ordinary pitch, and the second, "skŷ'," has a long diphthong, and with a higher pitch. The next two measures are of the form strong-weak weak-strong, very usual at the commencement or on beginning the third or fourth measure. The third measure, "glim'mērs," has a short strong high first syllable, and a long weak low second syllable, which is also very common. The three long strong syllables which close the line are very common as an ending, the first is high, and the other two descend, but the voice must not drop to "mōo'n," as the sentence does not end. The weight of the last word makes the metre secure. In line 2 there are three long and rather strong syllables, but the pitch is low, and the weight unimportant. These are relieved by the trissyllabic third measure, in which the first two syllables are extremely light short and weak. The pitch rises on the long and strong "stā'rs," but higher yet on its verb (and hence heavy) "twin'klē," in which the first syllable is short and strong, but the second long and weak, the *lē* standing for the long *l* only. Line 3 does not satisfy any one of my three tests, for it is only the fourth and fifth measures which end with a strong syllable. On examination it will be seen that the line consists of two sections; the first, "trēm'bling spānglē's," of two measures with the strong and long syllable first, and the last ending with a long syllable; and the second, "set in her dā'rk gau'ze vēi'l," of three measures, of which the first two are common initial and post-pausal measures (strong-weak + weak-strong), and it is this arrange-

ment which saves the line; the last three syllables are all strong, but the last is the *heaviest*, and this makes the line complete. It would be easy to alter the line to

Set in | her dā'rk] gāu'ze vēi'l | like trēm']bling spā'n'glēs,  
or to

Trēm'bling | like spā'n']glēs in | her dā'rk] gāu'ze vēi'l,  
or

Like spā'n']glēs trēm']bling in | her dā'rk] gāu'ze vēi'l.

But all these would be far more commonplace both in rhythm and poetry. At present, the beginning of the line typifies the feeling of the trembling starlight, while the three strong final syllables contrast this with the dark expanse of the heavens.

"Line 4, with its nine strong syllables, is strange. The fifth syllable, 'dull,' has decidedly more force than the sixth, 'queen,' because the word forms a climax, but the 'queen' throughout has much weight from grammatical reasons, which restores the balance of rhythm. The slight pause in the fifth measure raises the 'queen' in force, and also requires the pitch to be sustained, that the ear may be prepared for the 'ā'ye,' which not only rises in force, but much more in pitch, and must be followed by a much longer silence, ready for the burst in the next line (5), where the first words, 'give me the,' will be very short, though 'give' will be distinctly emphasised, and with a much lower pitch than the preceding 'ā'ye.' The chief force comes on 'sō'cial,' which will lengthen its first syllable and rise in pitch, whereas 'glow' will be nearly as strong, much heavier, but lower. The last four syllables seem to knock verse on the head, but the nearly equal force of 'bright' and 'coal,' with heavier weight and higher pitch of 'coal,' allow the slight pause after it; the weak but lengthened 'the' (which must have a perceptible pause after it, without dropping the voice to the lowest pitch, to fill up the last measure), prepares the mind to contrast the steady brightness of the glowing coal with the jerking darting flame—typified in the whole two lines 6 and 7, first by the three-fold recurrence of the group strong-weak + weak-strong (the first united with another of the form weak-weak-strong, having the weak syllables almost sub-

weak and sub-short, and the two others, complete in themselves, with the weak syllables rising to medium force and medial length), and next in the curious form of the last two measures of line 7, 'accōm'paniment,' which must retain all its five syllables. The gushing of the 'melody' is indicated in a similar manner by the two trissyllabic measures in line 8; the effect may be readily seen by avoiding them thus—

Of bri'ghtsome nō'tes, ring'ing from bri'ghtsome hēa'r'ts,  
or, worse far, but restoring regularity—

Of bri'ghtsome nō'tes, that rī'ng from bri'ghtsome hēa'r'ts,  
where I have marked the regular singsong pitch. One can fancy Pope 'correcting' to this form!

"After the three very dull regular lines 9, 10, 11, the ear is greatly relieved by the line 12, beginning with three weak syllables, rising to a climax of weight and pitch in 'rhythm,' and introducing a trissyllabic fourth measure, with sustained pitch on the last syllable of the fifth measure to mark the parenthetical clause, and lead on to the last line 13, with its heavy lengthy rhythm, marked especially by the word 'sun-god,' which has most force on the first syllable, 'sun,' but higher pitch and heavier weight on the second, 'god.' The last three measures of this line, with four long, strong, and heavy syllables, is relieved by distributing them into two groups of two, separated by a very light weak measure with a last syllable of medial length, which saves the line from ponderosity without detracting from its majesty.

"These observations on my own lines, patched together for the mere purpose of exemplification, will serve to shew the method in which, if I could bestow the requisite time upon them, I should study the rhythms of real poets, and the great complexity of English rhythms in the state they have reached since the beginning of the seventeenth century, when Shakspeare had learned to be daring in metre as well as poetry. But each poet would have to be considered in relation to his antecedents and his contemporaries, and the state of our language at the time, as shewn by its pronunciation, and its prose manipulation. Each poet, worthy of being so called, bears his own individual

rhythmical stamp, as well as that of his age. We must not judge Chaucer's rhythms by Browning's or Swinburne's, any more than we must judge the unison music of the Greeks by the choral music of Handel and Bach."

Mr Ellis remarks subsequently that the above rules are defective in not paying sufficient regard to the fifth measure, which, striking the ear last, like a cadence in music, is often typical. With respect to this fifth measure, the general condition, although circumstances sometimes arise which induce the poet to violate it, is that the last syllable should *not be weaker* than the preceding syllable or syllables, and that, when it is actually weaker, it should be at least longer or heavier. The usual form of the fifth measure is weak-strong.

"In looking through the first book of *Paradise Lost*, I find this usual form in a decided majority of instances. It occurs in fifteen out of the first sixteen lines already quoted (p. 58). Even in the exception (line 12), the fifth measure is at most mean-strong. In a few instances I have noted weak-weak-strong; but then the weak is usually subweak, as: ethere-al sky, fie-ry gulf, tempestu-ous fire, mutu-al league, perpetu-al king, sulphu-rous hail, fie-ry waves, Stygi-an flood, obli-vious pool, superi-or friend, ponde-rous shield, cho-sen this place, popu-lous North, barba-rous sons, fie-ry couch, tem-ple of God, border-ing flood, gener-al names, Isra-el 'scape, spi-rit more lewd (where the second weak syllable is almost sub-mean, but *sprite* may have been said), counten-ance cast, follow-ers rather (with a superfluous syllable also), spir-it that fell. A very common variety is simply weak-weak, as: ar-gument, prov-idence, vis-ible, en-emy, suprem-acy, es-sences, mis-ery, mis-erable, (with a superfluous syllable, which is not usual after a fifth measure of this kind), calam-ity, circum-ference, chiv-alry, car-casses, invis-ible, etc.

"The most important deviation, however, consists in having fifth measures of the form strong-superstrong, or mean-strong, or even strong-strong or strong-heavy. I subjoin all cases of this kind which occur in the first book of *Paradise Lost*, quoting the whole line, and italicising those other measures, which, instead of being weak-strong, have any other form, as weak-

weak, mean-strong, strong-strong, strong-mean, strong-weak, or trisyllabic. The figures prefixed shew all the measures in which the *last* syllable predominates over the others, and a glance at them will shew that, whatever other measures satisfy this condition, we have always either the third and fifth, or the second and fourth, that most frequently only four measures satisfy this condition, and that when all the five measures have the principal force on the last syllable (which occurs in seven cases), one at least of these measures is varied by strengthening or lengthening the preceding syllable, or trisyllabising a measure, and thus avoiding the monotony—in fact only one ("By ancient Tarsus") does not treat at least two measures in this way.

- 1 345 Wast pre|sent, and| with might|y wings| out-spread  
 123 5 Say first | for Heav'n| hides noth|ing from| thy view  
 2345 Nor the | deep tract| of Hell; | say first| what cause  
 \* 23 5 Favour'd | of Heav'n| so high|y to| fall off  
 123 5 The infer|nal ser|pent; he | it was,| whose guile  
 2345 Mix'd with | obdu|rate pride | and stead|fast hate  
 12 45 A dun|geon hor|rible | on all| sides round  
 123 5 As one | great fur|nace flam'd; | yet from those flames  
 2345 Regions | of sor|row, dole|ful shades,| where peace  
 123 5 That comes | to all;| but tor|ture with|out end  
 2 45 There the | compan|ions of | his fall| o'erwhelm'd  
 123 5 And thence | in Heav'n| call'd Sat|an, with| bold words  
 12345 If thou | beest he,| but O, | how fall'n!| how chang'd  
 23 5 Cloth'd with | transcend|ent bright|ness, didst | outshine  
 12345 Though chang'd | in out|ward lus|tre that| fix'd mind  
 2 45 Who from | the ter|ror of | this arm| so late  
 2 45 Irrec|oncile|able | to our| grand foe  
 2345 Out of | our e|vil seek | to bring| forth good  
 12345 By an|cient Tars|us held; | or that| sea-beast  
 2 45 Moors by | his side| under | the lee,| while night  
 12345 So stretch'd | out huge| in length | the arch|-fiend lay  
 2 45 Evil | to oth|ers; and | enrag'd,| might see  
 123 5 How all | his mal|ice serv'd | but to| bring forth  
 123 5 That felt | unu|sual weight; | till on| dry land  
 123 5 Of un|blest feet|. Him fol|low'd his| next mate  
 23 5 In this | unhap|py man|sion; or| once more  
 2 45 Hung on | his should|ers like | the moon, | whose orb  
 2 45 Or in | Valdar|no to | descry| new lands  
 12345 Hath ver'd | the Red| Sea coast, | whose waves| o'erthrew

- 2345 *Roaming* | to seek] their prey | on earth,] durst fix  
 12345 By that | uxo]rious king, | whose heart] though large  
 123 5 Of Tham[muz year]ly wound|ed; the] love-tale  
 123 5 Infect|ed Si]on's daught|ers with] like heat  
 1 345 Of a|liena]ted Ju[dah. Next] came one  
 2345 *Maim'd* his | brute im]age, head | and hands] lopt off  
 1 345 From mor|tal or] immor|tal minds.] Thus they  
 123 5 That fought | at Thebes] and Il|i]um, on] each side  
 123 5 That all | these pu]issant le]gions whose | exile  
 1 345 He spake, | and, to] confirm] his words | out-flew  
 1 3 5 In vi]sion be]atific: by] him first  
 12345 To man|y a row] of pipes | the sound-]board breathes

Nevertheless, even with this supplementary caution respecting the constitution of the fifth measure, my rules do not form, as I thought, the sole conditions of rhythmical verse. A really rhythmical line can be contrived (as line 3 of my own, p. 63), which does not follow my rules, but owes its rhythmical character to other considerations, which I have partly noticed on p. 64."

In the above remarks of Mr Ellis I cordially agree, (1) as to the general statement of the law of the heroic metre, (2) as to the greater or less intensity of the metrical stress even in what would be usually treated as regular iambic feet. I also agree, to a considerable extent, in what he says (3) as to the limits of trisyllabic and trochaic substitution. But whilst I admire, I with difficulty repress a shudder at the elaborate apparatus he has provided for registering the minutest variations of metrical stress. Not only does he distinguish nine different degrees of force, but there are the same number of degrees of length, pitch, silence, and weight, making altogether forty-five varieties of stress at the disposal of the metrist. The first observation which occurs upon this is that, here as elsewhere, the better is the enemy of the good. If the analysis of rhythm is so terribly complicated, let us rush into the arms of the intuitivists and trust to our ears only, for life is not long enough to admit of characterizing lines when there are forty-five expressions for each syllable to be considered. But leaving this: there is no difficulty in understanding what is meant by force, pitch, length and silence, and I allow that all of them have an influence on



English rhythm, though the first alone determines its general character. But what is meant by "weight"? Mr Ellis calls it "a very complex phenomenon," which "is, more than all, the governing principle of English verse," and "is due to expression and mental conceptions of importance, resulting partly from expression in delivery, produced by quality of tone and gliding pitch, and partly from the mental effect of the constructional predominance of conceptions." I cannot think that what is thus described has any right to be classed along with those very definite accidents or conditions of sound, force, pitch, length and silence. Feeling and thought may be expressed by any one of these, as well as by the regularity or irregularity of successive sounds. Weight therefore cannot be defined as expressiveness; or if it is, it is something which cannot exist separately, but only manifests itself through the medium of one of the others<sup>1</sup>. Nor do I find the difficulty cleared up by looking at Mr Ellis's examples. In his own lines he tells us (p. 64) that "moon," at the end of the first, has weight, but in the second, "sad ghost of night," though "long and strong," is "unimportant in weight": "twinkle" is heavy as being a verb, and also "glow" and "coal" further on. I confess I fail to see any ground for these distinctions; to insist upon them as essential to the appreciation of rhythm seems to me to be putting an unnecessary burden on all students of poetry. The one thing to attend to is the variation of *force*, arising either from emphasis, in the case of monosyllables, or from the word-accent in polysyllables. When this is thoroughly grasped it may be well to notice how the rhythm thus obtained receives a further colouring from pitch, length, or silence, from alliteration, and in various other ways, but all these are secondary.

I proceed now to consider the limitation which Mr Ellis puts upon the general rule that every foot admits of the inversion of the accent. In the remarks above quoted he gives

<sup>1</sup> On this Mr Ellis writes "respecting 'weight,' I am afraid I cannot go into further particulars. I do not insist on the appreciation of weight, or pitch, or quality, or length, or anything; but variety of force for the mere

discovery of the laws of rhythm. The other considerations are only required for the complete estimation of the poet's march within those laws, and this march differs materially from poet to poet."

two views, not quite consistent with each other, one of which appeared for the first time in 1848, and the other in 1869. According to the former, "it is necessary that there should be an accent on the last syllable, either of the third and fifth measures, or of the second and fourth. If either of these requisites is complied with, other accents may be distributed almost at pleasure." According to the latter view, "there must be a principal stress on the last syllable of the second and fourth measures; or of the first and fourth; or of the third and some other. If any one of these three conditions is satisfied, the verse, so far as stress is concerned, is complete." Yet elsewhere Mr Ellis confesses that even this later and freer view is only applicable in cases in which "the feeling of the rhythm is still preserved, not in a case in which the initial syllables of all the other measures had the stress;" and that "rhythmical lines can be written which do not observe these rules, though their observance creates rhythmical lines." But how can it be said that "their observance creates rhythmical lines," when it has just been acknowledged that it will *not* do so, if the initial syllables of all the other measures have the stress? I am unable to understand the value of a rule, the observance of which does not necessarily make the line rhythmical, and the breach of which does not necessarily make it unrhythmical. Of the latter we have more than one example in the lines quoted by Mr Ellis himself. Thus his own line,

Trémbling spángles sét in her dárk gauze véil,

has the final stress only in the fourth and fifth measures.

We will now try the effect of an accent on the last syllable of the second and fourth feet, which is all that is required, according to both of Mr Ellis' statements, to complete the verse, as far as stress is concerned.

Hárk there | is heard | sounð as | of man | groaning |.

I cannot say that this rhythm is at all satisfactory to my ear, and I should doubt very much whether a parallel could be found for it from any iambic passage by a recognized poet. It seems to me that a better rhythm is produced by the iamb in the second and the fifth place; *e.g.*

Sound the | alarm | sound the | trumpet | of war|.

In fact, as Mr Ellis acknowledges in his subsequent statement, the final iamb is almost as characteristic in English as in Greek; if it is inverted, the rest of the line must be strongly iambic, not to lose its proper rhythmical character. I should be inclined to say that the limit of trochaic substitution was three out of five, provided that the final foot remained iambic, otherwise two out of five (see however below on *Hamlet*). We have tried a line with trochees in all but the second and fifth, we will now give specimens of iambs in the other feet.

First and fifth— The din | thickens | sound the | trumpet | of war|.

Third and fifth— Hark the | chorus | is heard | sweetly | they sing|.

Perhaps one should except also the line which has the two iambs close together (fourth and fifth), as

Hark how | loud the | chorus | of joy | they sing|,

unless there is a decided break in the sense so as to make a pause after the first two feet, as in Mr Ellis' line

Trembling | spangles | set in | her dark | gauze veil|.

I think however, it is a mistake to pick out a certain position of the accents, as Mr Ellis has done in p. 59, and speak of the rhythm of a line as owing to accents so placed, when the line has other accents which are of themselves capable of sustaining the rhythm.

With regard to the other accentual irregularities, excess of accent, *i.e.* the spondee, is allowable in any position, and I am inclined to think that the limit of this substitution is wider than those which we have been considering, that in fact there might be four spondees in the line, supposing that the fourth or fifth foot remains iambic; that we might have, for instance,

Rocks caves, | lakes fens, | bogs dens, | shades dire | of death

| death's region all |

| where dark | death reigns|<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Since the above was written I have had my attention drawn to Milton's line containing four spondees, the solitary iamb occurring in the 2nd foot,

Say Muse | their names | then known | who first | who last |  
 2    1            0            1            1            1            1            1            1

Defect of accent, the pyrrhic, may also be found in any position, but it is rare for two pyrrhics to come together, and perhaps impossible without a secondary accent falling on one of the syllables, *e.g.* on the last syllable of *mansionry*.

By his | loved man|sionry | that the | heaven's breath|.

Perhaps this line would be better scanned with a trisyllabic fourth foot, but we might replace 'heaven's breath' by 'sweet south,' without destroying the rhythm. If not more than two pyrrhics can come together, it follows that the limit to this substitution will be three out of five, and as a rule the other feet would be spondees rather than iambs.

As to trisyllabic substitution it is plain that, if we set no limit to this, the character of the metre is changed, and that, if we were to meet, say, such a line as the following in a heroic passage descriptive of the sphinx,

Terrible | her approach | with a hid|eous yelling and scream|  
we could only describe it as an intrusion of trisyllabic metre. On the other hand, we might say, without destroying the iambic character of the line

Terrible | their approach | with on|set huge | of war |  
 (or) with hi|deous din | of war |  
 (but not, I think) with hi|deous yelling and scream|.

That is, I think the limit of trisyllabic substitution is three out of five. I should be surprised to find more than this in any serious poetry, and if it did occur, I think the true scientific account (*i.e.* the scanning) of the line would be, to call it an anapaestic verse inserted by a freak of the poet in the midst of a passage of a different nature<sup>1</sup>.

We must distinguish, however, between the different kinds of trisyllabic feet. The anapaest, which may be considered an

<sup>1</sup> Mr Swinburne however has a heroic line which contains four anapaests and yet satisfies the ear;

Thou art older and colder of spirit and blood | than I |

*Mar. Fal. A. 8. Sc. 1.*

No doubt the syllables run very smoothly, so that the anapaests are not far removed from slurred iambs.

extension of the iamb, is the most common; the dactyl, which is similarly an extension of the trochee, is only allowable, I think, in the first and either the third or fourth foot; *e.g.* we may say

Terrible | their approach | terrible | the clash | of war |

or

Terrible | the clash | of war | terrible | the din|.

Whether amphibrachys, *i.e.* iamb followed by an unaccented syllable, could be allowed in any place, except, of course, in cases of feminine rhythm, is perhaps doubtful. I cannot remember any parallel to a heroic line such as the following, but I see no objection to it :

Rebounding | from the rock | the an|gry break|ers roared|.

A similar doubt may be raised with regard to the tribrach, *i.e.* a foot consisting of three unaccented syllables. Mr Ellis finds a tribrach in the fourth place of the following line,

Of man's | first dis|obe|dience and | the fruit|.  
 0    2            1    0   0 2   0    0    0            0    2

But I should prefer to divide as follows, making the last foot an anapaest

Of man's | first dis|obe|dience | and the fruit|.

The question will be further considered in reference to Mr Masson's remarks on Milton's versification, to which I now proceed.

His views are given in an Essay on Versification prefixed to his edition of Milton, Vol. I. pp. CVII—CXXXII. The general formula of Milton's blank verse being *xa* (where *x* stands for an unaccented, *a* for an accented syllable), he explains this formula to mean that "each line delivers into the ear a general *5xa* effect; the ways of producing this effect being various. What the ways are, can only be ascertained by carefully reading and scanning a sufficient number of specimens of approved blank verse." "On the whole it is best to assume that strictly metrical effects are pretty permanent, that what was agreeable to the English metrical sense in former generations, is agreeable now, and that, even in verse as old as Chaucer's, one of the

tests of the right metrical reading of any line is that it shall satisfy the present ear." "What combinations of the disyllabic groups *aa*, *ax*, *xx*, *aa*, can produce a blank verse which shall be good to the ear, is not a matter for arithmetical computation, but for experience<sup>1</sup>." Sometimes a line will be found satisfactory to the ear, though only one, or not even one of its feet is of the normal type, *e.g.*

Scanda|lous or | forbid|den in | our law|.

Hail! Son | of the | Most High | heir of | both worlds|.

"I perpetually find in Milton a foot for which 'spondee' is the best name." "English blank verse admits a trochee, spondee, or tribrach in almost any place in the line." "There are four spondees in the line

Say Muse, | their names | then known | who first, | who last|".

The number of accents in a line varies from three to eight. In seventy lines, containing trisyllabic feet, Mr Masson finds eighteen anapaests, occurring in any place; six dactyls, occurring in the first, second, and fourth feet; six tribrachs in the first, second, and third; three antibacchius, occurring in the second and third; two cretics in the first and fourth; thirty-five amphibrachs, occurring in any foot but the last: in some lines there are two trisyllabic feet. He refuses to get rid of

<sup>1</sup> This is in somewhat amusing contrast with Dr Guest's *a priori* calculation of the possible varieties of the heroic line. Beginning with the section of two accents, he says, "this, when it begins abruptly, is capable only of two forms *AbA* and *AbbA*; but, as these may be lengthened and doubly lengthened, they produce six varieties. It is capable of six other varieties when it begins with one unaccented syllable, and of the like number when it begins with two. Hence the whole number of possible varieties is 18. The verse of four accents, being made up of two sections of two accents each, will give 18 multiplied by 18 varieties,

or 324. The possible varieties of the verse with five accents is 1296, to wit, 648 when the first section has two accents, and the like number when it has three. Of this vast number by far the larger portion has never yet been applied to the purposes of verse. There are doubtless many combinations, as yet untried, which would satisfy the ear, and it is matter of surprise, at a time when novelty has been sought after with so much zeal, and often to the sacrifice of the highest principles, that a path so promising should have been adventured upon so seldom." *English Rhythms* p. 160.

syllables by the process of elision or slurring. As the line has frequently more than ten syllables, so it has occasionally less.

Mr Masson quotes largely in proof of his theory, but it seems to me that in many cases the line is wrongly scanned. Thus to show that a line may have no more than nine syllables he quotes (from *Comus*, 596)

Self-fed and self-consum'd : if this fail.

But though the *e* of 'consumed' is omitted in the standard editions, we are not bound to consider that this represents the pronunciation, any more than that 'rott'ness' in the next line is a disyllable. If we read 'consumed' as a trisyllable, the line is perfectly regular. Another instance of a nine-syllable line has still less to say for itself. In Pickering's edition it reads thus (*P. L.* iii. 216)—

Dwells in | all hea|ven char|ity | so deare|,

which is of course perfectly regular. •

The question of elision and slurring will be considered further on. If, as I believe, Milton practised both, this would very much weaken, if not entirely destroy, the evidence in favour of such feet as the antibacchius, cretic and amphibrach. As examples of the first we find

If true | here only | and of | deli|cious taste |  
Not this | rock only | his om|nipres|ence fills |  
Thy pun|ishment | then justly | is at | his will |

In these lines the *y* of *only* and *justly* may be either slurred before the following vowel, or it may be taken with the following foot and change that into an anapaest. For cretics we have the lines

Each to oth|er like | more'than | on earth | is thought | .  
I must | not suffer this | yet 'tis but | the lees | *Com.* 809.

In the former I should be disposed to slur *to*, making the first foot a spondee; compare

The ^one wind|ing, the ^oth|er straight | and left | between|.  
*P. R.* III. 256.

The ^one sweet|ly flat|ters, the ^oth|er fear|eth harm|.  
*Rape of Lucrece* 172.

In the latter it might be contended, on other than metrical grounds, that *yet* had been foisted into the text by mistake. " 'Tis but the lees" would then give the reason for "I must not suffer this." If the 'yet' is genuine, it implies that, though the lady has committed a punishable offence, yet Comus considering it to be merely owing to the "settlings of a melancholy blood," requires nothing more than that she should drink the contents of the magic glass. In this case, 'yet' should be scanned with the preceding foot, which would then be an anapaest.

As regards the examples of amphibrach, many disappear if we allow of slurring and elision, as

Whom reason | hath equalled force | hath made | supreme |  
which becomes regular if we read *reas'n* ;

Of rainbows | and starry eyes | the waters thus |  
which should be divided as follows, slurring *y* before *eyes* :

Of rain|bows and | starry^eyes | the wa|ters thus |

In the lines which follow, 'pursuers' and 'the highest' may either be taken as slurred iambs or the last syllable in each case should go with the following foot, making it an anapaest.

Of their | pursuers | and overcame | by flight |  
Aim at | the highest | without | the highest | attained |

In other cases the line may be read with an anapaest instead of an amphibrach

Fled and | pursued | transverse | the resonant fugue |  
where the last two feet may be divided  
| the resonant fugue |.

[In the lines which follow I italicise Mr Masson's amphibrachs, but divide, as I should scan them myself, with anapaests.]

*The intricate* wards | and every bolt | and bar |  
*In piety* thus | and pure | devotion |  
*Ridiculous* | and the work | Confusion named |  
*Their city* his temple and | their holy ark |  
*Miraculous* yet | remaining in | those locks |  
*This insolence* other kind | of answer fits |  
*Of massey iron* or solid rock | with ease |



Carnation purple azure or speekt | with gold |  
 Out, out | *hyacina* these | are thy won|ted arts |  
 Tongue-dough|ty *gilans* how | dost thou prove | me these |  
 To quench | the drought | of *Phoe|bus* which | as they taste |  
 But for | that damn'd | *magic|ian* let | him be girt |  
 Crams and | blasphemes | *his fee|der* shall | I go on |  
 Made god|dess of | *the riv|er* still | she retains |

I need not go through the whole list. All may be treated in the same way; I can see no reason why Mr Masson should have found amphibrachs in them any more than in the following line, which he himself reads with an anapaest, not as might have been expected, with an initial amphibrach.

Afford | me, assas|sina|ted and | betrayed |. *S. Ag.* 1109.

While agreeing with Mr Masson in finding dactyls, anapaests and trochees in Milton's blank verse, I cannot accept his scanning of the following lines, which I have divided, so as to show what I believe to be the real feet, italicizing Mr Masson's dactyls.

*Little* | suspicious to any king | but now |  
 Shook the <sup>A</sup>*ar|senal* | and thun|dered o|ver Greece |  
 From us | his foes | pronounced | *glory* | *he* exacts |

Next comes the question of the tribrach, of which the following examples are cited. As before, I italicize the supposed tribrachs, while giving my own scanning.

*Epic|ure|an* and | the Stoic | severe |  
 Curios|ity | *inquis|itive* im|portune |

[Mr Masson considers that the last line consists of anapaest, tribrach, trochee and two iambs. I read it as anapaest, two iambs, anapaest, iamb, supposing the accent of 'importune' to be the same as in *P. L.* ix. 610; if it is accented as in *P. R.* ii. 404, the 4th foot would be an iamb, and the line would have a feminine ending.]

So he | with dif|ficul|ty and la|bour hard |  
 To a | fell ad|versa|ry his hate | and name |  
 The throne | heredi|tary and bound | his reign |.

On the whole I do not find any instance among those cited by Mr Masson, which requires us to admit that Milton used

either the tribrach or the amphibrach. I think all the lines may be more easily explained by the supposition of an anapaest in some other foot. Without absolutely denying the possibility of a tribrach in the heroic metre, I should certainly expect to find a gradation of stress in the group of three short syllables, which would entitle it to be treated as either dactyl or anapaest, rather than tribrach. See however below on *Hamlet*.

It may be worth while to compare with Mr Masson's account of the Miltonic line, the remarks on the same subject by Mr Keightley in his interesting volume on the *Life, Opinions and Writings* of Milton. He considers that English blank verse is derived from the Italian; that it admits hyper-metric syllables both after the caesura (or section) and at the end of the line; that Milton further borrowed from the Italian poets the double trochee at the beginning of the line, as well as after the caesura, and a freer use of the anapaest, though abstaining from one peculiarity of Italian verse, viz. the sequence iamb-trochee at the beginning of the line<sup>1</sup>. As to the last however Mr Keightley himself cites immediately afterwards two verses in which this sequence occurs

Inclines | here to | contin|ue and build | up here |     *P. L.* 2. 313  
 0 1     1 0     0 1 0 0     1 0 1

Among | daughters | of men | the fai|rest found |     *P. R.* 2. 154.  
 0 1     1 0     0 1     0 1 0 1

and we have already noticed other examples in treating of Dr. Guest's 'pausing section.'

Of the initial double trochee Mr Keightley gives twenty examples from Milton (one or two of which might be differently scanned, but several might be added in their place) and shows how common the sequence is in Italian by quo-

<sup>1</sup> Compare R. W. Evans *Versification* p. 84 "the trochee is admitted by the Italian into every foot but the last, and even two are allowed to stand together, as in the very first line of Tasso's epic. Milton, who was deeply imbued with Italian poetry and had a pedantic turn, accordingly admits it

indiscriminately as in *P. L.*

*Shoots in|visi|ble vir|tue e'en | to the deep |* III. 587.

*In the | visions | of God | . It was | a hill |* XI. 377.

*Thy lingering, or | with one | stroke of | his dart |* II. 702."

tations from the beginning of the *Gerusalemme Liberata*. I have already touched on this in reference to the line

Uni|versal | reproach | far worse | to bear|.

Of double trochee after caesura we have such examples as

Crea|ted thee | in the | image | of God | *P. L.* 7. 427  
<sub>1 0 2 0</sub>

And dust | shalt eat | all the | days of | thy life | *P. L.* 10. 178  
<sub>1 0 1 0</sub>

Cast wan|ton eyes | on the | daughters | of men | *P. R.* 2. 180.  
<sub>1 0 2 0</sub>

Dante and Petrarch are cited as using the same sequence in Italian. Of the hypermetric syllable at the caesura, the following examples are given. I have divided them so as to show that they may be scanned without this.

Before | thy fel|lows, am|bitious | to win | *P. L.* 6. 160  
<sub>2 0</sub>

With their | bright lu|minaries|, that set | and rose | *P. L.* 7. 385.  
<sub>0 0 1</sub>

Thy con|descen|sion, and | shall be hon|oured ev|er. *P. L.* 8. 649.  
<sub>0 1 0 0 2</sub>

That cru|el ser|pent. On me | exer|cise not | *P. L.* 10. 927  
<sub>0 0 2 1 0</sub>

Seemed their | petiti|on, than when | that an|cient pair | *P. L.* 11. 10  
<sub>0 0 1</sub>

For in | those days | might on|ly shall be | admired | *ib.* 689.  
<sub>0 0 1</sub>

Mr Keightley even admits a hypermetric syllable at the semicaesura, as

On Lem|nos | the Aegæ|an isle|. Thus they | relate | *P. L.* 1. 746.

which is usually and, I think, correctly scanned

On Lem|nos th' Ae|gean isle | thus they | relate|.

His second example is even less appropriate. I scan it

Who sees | thee? and what | is one? | who should'st | be seen | *P. L.* 9. 546.

## CHAPTER VI.

### METRICAL METAMORPHOSIS.

THOSE who have paid little attention to the subject of metre will probably think it a very easy matter to settle off-hand the metre of any verse which is submitted to them. Starting with the four simple metres, they are apt to assume that, if a verse commences with an accented followed by an unaccented syllable, it must be trochaic; if it commences with an unaccented followed by an accented syllable, iambic; if with an accented followed by two unaccented syllables, dactylic; if with two unaccented syllables followed by an accented syllable, anapaestic. But the most cursory examination of any dozen lines of a poem written in some recognized metre, such as *Paradise Lost*, would be sufficient to prove their error. Take for instance such a line as *P. L.* i. 12

Fast by the oracle of God. I thence

this seems to begin with two dactyls; why should it not be called dactylic? Because we know that the poem from which it is taken is written in five-foot iambic; and therefore this line must be iambic, and must contain five feet. Dividing it into five pairs of syllables, we find that instead of beginning with two dactyls, it begins with a trochee followed by an iamb. And a little further examination will show that this is no isolated case, that somewhere about one-sixth of Milton's iambic lines commence with a trochee. A smaller number commence with a dactyl, as i. 87

Myriads | though bright | , if he | whom mu|tual league |

and a still smaller with anapaest as

*P. L.* iv 2 The Apoc|alypse | , heard cry | in Heaven | aloud |

*P. R.* II 234 No advan|tage, and | his strength | as oft | assay |

*P. L.* II 880 With impet|uous | recoil | and jar|ring sound | ;

unless we consider this last to begin with a trochee and dactyl, which perhaps gives a more telling rhythm.

It is plain therefore that the position of the accent in the first three syllables is no criterion as to the metre of the line. The inference which might be drawn from the 1st foot has to be corrected by our knowledge of the general metre of the poem. It is not even safe to judge of the metre from the first two feet, for (as we have seen in p. 38), some iambic lines begin with two trochees. Nor again can we rely upon the close of the line as giving an infallible criterion of the metre. The line is not necessarily trochaic because it ends with an accented followed by an unaccented syllable, nor iambic because it ends with an unaccented followed by an accented syllable. On the contrary, one very common species of the iambic line has the feminine ending, that is, closes with a hypermetrical unaccented syllable. And thus we find iambic lines which might be said both to begin and end with a trochee, as *P. L.* I. 263

Better to reign in hell than serve in heaven.

Or take such a line as

Beautiful Paris, evil-hearted Paris.

Here every foot seems to be a trochee except the 1st, which is a dactyl or extended trochee, bearing the same relation to the trochee proper as the anapaest to the iamb. Yet none of us would hesitate to call it iambic and divide accordingly,

Beauti|ful Par|is e|vil-hear|ted Par|is,

because it occurs in a well-known heroic poem.

Conversely the commonest species of trochaic drops its final syllable, that is, suffers truncation, as in

Hark the | herald | angels | sing | .

Beside the feminine iambic, we find specimens of the masculine form closing with a trochee (like the classical scazon), as in the following from Morris' *Jason*.

III 54 About | this keel | that ye | are now | lacking |  
 III 292 With whom | Alceme|na played | but nought | witting |  
 III 549 Anoth|er sun | shine on | this fair | city |  
 II 641 Still flew | on toward | the east | no wit | heeding |  
 I 153 And put | the child | before | him but | Cheiron |

Conversely we find specimens of a trochaic line beginning with an iamb in Tennyson's *Dirge*,

The frail | bluebell | peereth | over |  
 0 1 2 0 1 0 1 0

### Shelley's *Euganean Hills*.

The frail | bark of | this lone | being :

*Skylark,*

The blue | deep thou | wingest |  
 The pale | purple | even |

*Invocation.*

The fresh | earth in | new leaves | drest |  
 0 1 2 0 2 1 2

We have seen that an unaccented syllable may be added at the end of an iambic line or cut off from the end of a trochaic line. Does the beginning of the line admit of the same licenses? We are told that it is so in Chaucer. Prof. Skeat (in his edition of the *Prioresses' Tale* &c. p. LXIII) cites the following example of initial truncation, making a monosyllabic 1st foot :

*By* | a may|de lyk | to her | statu|rè  
*Til* | wel ny | the day | bigan | to sprin|gè  
*Light*|ly for | to play | and walk | on fo|tè  
*But* | a governour | wyly | and wys |

And Dr Morris (in his edition of the *Prologue* &c. p. XLIII) cites

*In* | a gowne | of fal|dyng to | the kne |  
*Now* | it schy|neth now | it rey|neth fast |

Other examples may be found in Schipper's *Englische Metrik*, p. 462.

This license is found in the heroic metre as late as Marlowe, compare *Tamburlaine* (Dyce, Vol. II. p. 48)

*Bar|barous | and blood|y Tam|burlaine |*  
p. 189 *Con|quer sack | and ut|terly | consume |*

and see below, p. 140.

The truncation just spoken of is, I think, now obsolete in the five-foot iambic; but it is not uncommon in shorter iambic lines. Take for instance Marlowe's *Come live with me*. This is a poem in four-foot iambic, and regular, with the exception of the second line in the following verse,

There will | I make | thee beds | of ro|ses  
*And | a thou|sand fra|grant po|sies*  
A cap | of flow|ers and | a kirt|le  
Embroid|ered all | with leaves | of myr|tle.

In *The Passions* of Collins, a four-foot iambic poem of 118 lines, there are 12 which suffer truncation. In Wordsworth's great Ode, out of 200 iambic and anapaestic lines of varying length, there are 5 which are trochaic in form, i.e. which suffer initial truncation.

Tennyson's *Lady Clara Vere de Vere* is in eight-line stanzas of four-foot iambic, perfectly regular with the exception of the 1st line of the stanza, which only once has the full number of syllables

I know | you Cla|ra Vere | de Vere | ,  
suffering initial truncation in the other stanzas, as

Trust | me Cla|ra Vere | de Vere | .

The same poet's *Arabian Nights* consists of fourteen stanzas of ten lines in four-foot iambic, followed by a three-foot feminine refrain

Of good | Haroun | Alras|chid

One line, and I think one line only in the whole, suffers initial truncation

*Black | the gar|den bowers | and grots |*  
*Slumbered | the sol|emn palms | were ranged |*  
*Above | unwoo'd | of sum|mer wind | .*

The *Lay of the Last Minstrel* is in the same metre with frequent anapaestic substitution. In Canto I, Stanza 5, the 3rd and 5th lines are truncated :

Ten squires | ten yeo|men mail-clad men |  
 Waited | the beck | of the war|ders ten |  
 Thir|ty steeds | both fleet | and white |  
 Stood sad|dled in stab|le day | and night |  
 Barbed | with front|let of steel | I trow |

Also in Stanza 29,

Never heav|ier man | and horse |  
 Stemm'd | a mid|night tor|rent's force |  
 The war|rrior's ver|y plume | I say |  
 Was dag|gled by | the dash|ing spray |

Milton's *Hymn on the Nativity* is written in iambic lines containing from three to six feet. Occasionally we find a monosyllabic first-foot.

Full lit|tle thought | they then |  
 That | the migh|ty Pan |  
 Was kind|ly come | to live | with them | below | .  
 When | such mu|sic sweet |  
 Their hearts | and ears | did greet |  
 As ne|ver was | by mor|tal fin|ger strook | .  
 And then | at last | our bliss |  
 Full | and per|fect is | .  
 Nor all | the Gods | beside |  
 Long|er dare | abide | .

So Shirley (*Golden Treasury*, p. 59),

Devour|ing Fam|ine, Plague, | and War |  
 Each a|ble to | undo | mankind |  
 Death's ser|vile e|missa|ries are |  
 Nor | to these | alone | confined | .

*Fair Helen* (*G. T.* p. 87),

I wish | I were | where Hel|len lies |  
 Night | and day | on me | she cries |  
 O that | I were | where Hel|len lies |  
 On fair | Kircon|nel lea | .

Cowper's *Royal George*,

Weigh | the ves|sel up |  
 Once dread|ed by | our foes |  
 And mingle with | the cup |  
 The tear | that Eng|land owes | .



*Christabel* is written in four-foot iambic and anapaestic lines, both of which suffer initial truncation. Thus

Sir Le|oline | the Bar|on rich |  
 Hath | a tooth|less mas|tiff bitch |  
 From | her ken|nel beneath | the rock |  
 She ma|keth ans|wer to | the clock |  
 Four | for the quar|ters and twelve | for the hour |  
 Ev|er and aye | by sun | and shower | .  
 Is | the night | chilly | and dark |  
 The night | is chilly but | not dark |  
 They steal | their way | from stair | to stair |  
 Now | in glim|mer and now | in gloom | .  
 The cham|ber carved | so cur|iously |  
 Carved | with fig|ures strange | and sweet |  
 All | made out | of the car|ver's brain | .

It may be asked, however, why the lines classed as truncated iambic should not be treated either as anapaestic or as truncated trochaic. If we met with the following lines apart from the context we should naturally scan them as anapaests; why not adhere to this more natural scansion? e.g.

That the migh|ty Pan | .  
 When such mu|sic sweet | .  
 Hath a tooth|less mas|tiff bitch |  
 From her ken|nel beneath | the rock | .

The answer is that Milton's poem is not anapaestic nor in any way irregular. It is composed in verses of eight lines, the 1st, 2nd, 4th, and 5th lines consisting of two iambic feet, the 3rd and 6th of five, the 7th of four, and the 8th of six. Even if we called the two lines just cited anapaestic, we should hardly venture to say the same of

Long|er dare | abide | .

*Christabel* no doubt admits lines of which the rhythm is trisyllabic; but, as Coleridge himself tells us that the accents are four, though the syllables vary from seven to twelve, this prevents us from scanning the lines quoted as anapaestic. In any case it would be difficult to make an anapaestic line out of

Is | the night | chilly | and dark | .  
 1     0         1         2     0         0         1

But, if they cannot be treated as anapaestic, why should they not be called truncated trochaics? Why may not the poet

have chosen to vary his iambic lines with an occasional trochaic? No doubt this is a possible explanation in some of the instances, such as

And a | thousand | vagrant | posies |  
Thirty | steeds both | fleet and | white | .

These read naturally as trochaics. But take

Now in | glimmer and | now in | gloom |  
Barbed with | frontlet of | steel I | trow |  
Is the night chilly and dark

the two former would give us a dactyl in the 2nd foot, which is rare in trochaic metre, and the last simply refuses to be treated as a trochaic at all.

Far more common however is the omission of one or both of the unaccented syllables of the anapaest. Iamb for anapaest is usual in all the feet of an anapaestic line, but in the 1st foot a monosyllable is also allowed. Thus in the following verses from the *Burial of Sir John Moore*, consisting of four anapaests with alternate masculine and feminine endings, there are two monosyllabic feet and four iambs, which I have printed in italics.

*Few* | and short | were the prayers | *we said* |  
And we spoke | not a word | *of sor*|row  
But we stead|fastly gazed | on the face | of the dead |  
And we bit|terly thought | of the mor|row.  
*Light*|ly they'll talk | of the spi|rit that's gone |  
And o'er | his cold ash|es upbraid | him,  
*But lit*tle he'll wreck | if they let | him sleep on |  
In the grave | where a Brit|on has laid | him.

So in Byron,

*Thou* | who art bear|ing my buck|ler and bow |  
Should the sol|diers of Saul | look away | from the foe |  
*Stretch* | me that mo|ment in blood | at thy feet |  
*Mine* | be the doom | which they dared | not to meet | .

And Swinburne (*Erechtheus*),

- l. 139 Fair fort|ress and fust|ress of sons | born free |  
Who stand | in her sight | and in thine | O sun |  
*Slaves* | of no | man sub|ject of none |  
l. 95 *Sun* | that hast light|ened and loosed | by thy might |  
O|cean and earth | from the lord|ship of night |  
*Quick*ening with vision his eye | that was veiled |  
*Fresh*ening the force | in her heart | that had failed |

That sis|ter fet|tered and blind|ed broth|er  
Should have sight | by thy grace | and delight | of each oth|er.

Matthew Arnold (*Heine's Grave*),

That | was Hei|ne and we |  
Myr|riads who live | who have died |  
What | are we all | but a mood |  
A sing|le mood | of the life |  
Of the Bei|ng in whom | we exist | .

Elliott (*Lament for Flodden*),

I've heard | them lil|ting at our | ewe-milk|ing  
Lass|es a' lil|ting before | dawn of day |  
But now | they are moan|ing on il|ka green loan|ing  
The Flowers | of the For|est are a' | wede away | .

Other examples will be found in the chapters on Classification of Metres.

Corresponding to the initial truncation of the anapaestic line is the final truncation of the dactylic line, as in

Take her up | tenderly |  
Lift her with | *care*  
Fashioned so | slenderly |  
Young and so | *fair*.  
Pibroch of | Donuil Dhu |  
Pibroch of | *Donuil*  
Wake thy wild | voice anew |  
Summon Clan | *Conuil*.

Brightest and | best of the | sons of the | *morning*  
Dawn on our | darkness and | lend us thine | *aid*  
Star of the | east the hor|izon ad|orning  
Guide where the | infant Re|deemer is | *laid*.

It may be asked what reason have we for classifying as anapaestic such a line as

Bright | be the place | of thy soul |

and as dactylic

Lift her with | *care* |

since it is plain that the former might be regarded as made up of two dactyls and a long syllable (truncated dactylic) and the latter of a long syllable followed by an anapaest (truncated anapaestic). The answer is that these ambiguous or metamorphous lines must be interpreted by others in the same poem, where the strict law of the metre is observed, such as

In the orbs | of the ble|ssed to shine | .

Take her up | tenderly | .

There are no doubt poems composed in a mixed metre, in which the rhythmical effect is produced by the juxtaposition of contrasted metres, say, trochaic and anapaestic; but none could say there was this contrasted effect in the poems above cited. The rhythm is felt to be the same throughout.

But truncation is not only practised at the beginning of the iambic and anapaestic line, and at the end of the trochaic and dactylic; it is also found in the interior of the line itself. Thus *Break, Break, Break* is a somewhat irregular poem, the prevailing rhythm of which is three-foot anapaest, but in two verses, the three anapaests are represented by these three long accented syllables.

Kingsley has internal truncation in his 4-foot anapaestic

Clear | and cool | clear | and cool |  
 By laugh|ing shall|ow and dream|ing pool | .  
 Dank | and foul | dank | and foul |  
 By the smo|ky town | in its mur|ky cowl | .  
 Strong | and free | strong | and free |  
 The flood | gates are o|pen away | to the sea | .

And Shelley in his *Address to Night*, the metre of which is anapaestic with iambic substitution, as in

And the wea|ry day | turned to | his rest |  
 Ling|ering like | an un|loved guest |

but, in the line which follows, the 3rd foot is truncated

Thy broth|er Death | came | and cried |  
 Wouldst | thou me | ?  
 The sweet | child Sleep | the fil|my-eyed |

I take the three next examples from Dr Guest. The first is truncated trochaic, which undergoes internal, as well as final truncation, in the 2nd and 7th lines.

On the | ground |  
 Sleep | sound |  
 I'll ap|ply |  
 To your | eye |  
 Gentle | lover | reme|dy | .

When thou | wak'st |  
 Thou | tak'st |  
 True de|light |  
 In the | sight |  
 Of thy | former | lady's | eye |

The second, from Burns, is four-foot iambic; it suffers internal truncation in the 1st and 3rd lines.

The sun | blinks blithe | on yon | town |  
 And on | yon bon|nie braes | of Ayr |  
 But my | delight | in yon | town |  
 And dea|rest bliss | is Lu|cy fair |.

The third is from Moore, written in four-foot and two-foot iambic. Internal truncation will be found in the 1st, 3rd, 5th, 6th and 8th lines.

The day | had sunk | in dim | showers |  
 But mid|night now | with lus|tre meek |  
 Illu|mined all | the pale | flowers |  
 Like hope | upon | a mour|ner's cheek |.  
 I said | while |  
 The moon's | smile |  
 Played o'er | a stream | in dimpling bliss |  
 The moon | looks |  
 On ma|ny brooks |  
 The brook | can see | no moon | but this |.

We may add the following from Shakespeare :

For love | is crow|ned with | the prime |  
 In spring | time |  
 The on|ly pret|ty ring | time |  
 When birds | do sing |  
 Hey ding | a ding |  
 Sweet lov|ers love | the spring |.

and this from Scott,

*March*, | *march*, | Ettrick and | Teviotdale, |  
 Why the deil | dinna ye march | forward in | order

where the corresponding lines of the next verse

Come from the | hills where your | hirsels are | grazing |  
 Come from the | glen of the | buck and the | roe |

show that the monosyllables *march march* represent dactyls, and also that *Teviotdale* and *dinna ye march* must be contracted into trisyllables.

But the first foot is not only liable to truncation of unaccented syllables, when such precede the accent according to the law of the metre, as in iambic and anapaestic poems; it may also admit anacrusis, i.e. have an unaccented syllable prefixed to the accent, where that should naturally come first, as in trochaic and dactylic poems. Thus, in Keats' *Realm of Fancy*, a four-foot trochaic poem of 94 lines, there are 7 which begin with a hypermetrical unaccented syllable, as

Thou shalt | at one | glance be|hold |  
 The) daisy | and the | mary|gold |

In his *Ode on the Poets* out of 42 lines there are 3 which have the anacrusis.

In Shelley's *Skylark* the prevailing metre is trochaic, but we find

What thou | art we | know not |  
 What is | most like | thee |  
 From) rainbow | clouds there | flow not |  
 Drops so | bright to | see |

So in *Duncan Gray*,

Something | in her | bosom | wrings |  
 For relief a | sigh she | brings |  
 And) O her | cen they | spak sic | things |.

and Tennyson's *Lilian*,

Praying | all I | can |  
 If) prayers | will not | hush thee |  
 Airy | Lili|an |  
 Like a | rose-leaf | I will | crush thee |  
 Fairy | Lili|an |.

It is evident that, when the common truncated trochaic has a hypermetrical syllable prefixed, it becomes undistinguishable from a complete iambic line, just as a truncated iambic, particularly if it has a feminine ending, takes the form of a trochaic. Since from either side then the one can so easily pass into the other, it is no wonder that we find poems consisting in nearly equal proportions of iambic and trochaic lines, in which probably neither the poet nor the reader is conscious of a change of metre. Such poems are *L'Allegro* and *Penseroso*. Starting with the regular metre in line 11 of the former, we have, in the next fifty lines, an equal number of trochaic and iambic lines. It is to be

noticed also that the iambic line often either begins with an accented, or ends with an unaccented syllable, as

And at | my win|dow bids | good mor|row  
Scatters | the rear | of dark|ness thin | .

The hypermetrical syllable in trochaic metre is thus always capable of being explained away as an intentional change to iambic, but a similar explanation would be very harsh in dactylic metre, such as the following,

Come away | come away |  
Hark to the | summons |  
Come in your | war array |  
Gentles and | commons. |  
Come from deep | glen and |  
From) mountain so | rocky |  
The) war-pipe and | pennon |  
Are) at Inver|lochy | .

There are many examples in Kingsley's *Longbeard's Saga*.

White were the | moorlands |  
And) frozen before her |  
Green were the | moorlands |  
And) blooming behind her | .  
Shaking the | southwind |  
A)round in the | birches |  
A)waking the | throistles | .  
This) day at the | Wendel's hands |  
Eagles must | tear them |  
Their) mother thrall|-weary |  
Must) grind for the | Wendels | .  
High in Val|halla |  
A) window stands | open |  
Its) sill is the | snowpeaks |  
Its) posts are the | waterspouts |  
Storm wrack its | lintel | .

It will be observed that, where a line begins with the hypermetrical syllable, the preceding line frequently ends with a trochee for dactyl, so that the effect is simply to complete the dactylic rhythm. This is not however the case in the following passage from *Christabel*, where two dactylic lines are interposed between anapaests,

And foundst | a bright la|dy surpass|ingly fair |

And) didst bring her | home with thee | <sup>1</sup>

In) love and in | charity |

To shield | her and shel|ter her from | the night air |

nor in the following from Hood's *Bridge of Sighs*, where in two of the lines anacrusis follows a complete dactyl at the end of the previous line.

A)las for the | rarity |

Of) Christian | charity |

Under the | sun |

O it was | pitiful |

Near a whole | city full |

Home there was | none |

Dreadfully | staring |

Thro) muddy imp|urity |

As) when with the | daring |

Last) look of des|pairing |

Fixed on fu|turity |.

Sometimes we find even two hypermetrical syllables, when the final dactyl of the preceding line is represented by a long syllable, thus passing into anapaestic rhythm, unless we are to regard this as a case of 'scriptorial disguise' treated of below.

The) bleak wind of | March |

Made her) tremble and | shiver |

But) not the dark | arch |

Nor the) black flowing | river |

So in the 3rd verse of *Pibroch of Donuil Dhu* the dactylic rhythm of the other verses is changed into the anapaestic,

Leave untend|ed the herd |

The flock | without shel|ter

Leave the corpse | uninterr'd |

The bride | at the alt|ar.

I presume without any deliberate intention on the part of the poet.

To take now a general view of the licences or irregularities admitted, we find, in trochaic, addition of an unaccented syllable

<sup>1</sup> This and the following line are usually printed together, but the rhyme shows that they should be separated, just as much as the short lines preceding, 'But vainly thou warrest, For this is alone in,' &c.



at the beginning, dropping of an unaccented syllable at the end, and substitution of iamb or dactyl in the first foot, rarely in others, giving rise to lines of pure iambic form, as "but let them rave," or of strong dactylic colouring, as "half invisible to the view." On the other hand, in iambic, we find addition of an unaccented syllable at the end, dropping of an unaccented syllable at the beginning, with trochaic and anapaestic substitution, giving rise to lines of pure trochaic form, as "Up there came a flower," or the anapaestic "In there came old Alice the nurse." So in anapaestic we have dropping of unaccented syllables at the beginning, and addition of an unaccented syllable at the end, with iambic substitution; in dactylic, dropping of unaccented syllables at the end, and addition of an unaccented syllable at the beginning, with trochaic substitution. The general principle may be thus laid down, that one or two unaccented syllables preceding the initial accent or following the final accent of the line are non-essential to the rhythm, and may be added or omitted without necessarily changing the metre.

So far we have considered cases in which one of the four principal metres has assumed the appearance of another. We will now proceed to examine cases in which the disguise assumed is that of the amphibrach. Dr Abbott (*English Lessons*, p. 212) reads Browning's line as an amphibrach.

Dirck galloped | I galloped | we galloped | all three |

Prof. Bain (*Eng. Comp.* p. 239) does the same with

There came to | the shore a | poor exile | of Erin |

and Mr Higginson (*Eng. Gramm.* p. 164) with

Distracted | with care |  
For Phyllis | the fair |  
Since nothing | could move her |  
Poor Damon | her lover | .

Probably most readers would on a first reading pronounce the same of the following lines from *Christabel*,

That in the | dim forest |  
Thou heardst a | low moaning |  
And foundst a | bright lady | surpassingly fair |

and from Southey's *Lodore*,

Collecting | projecting |  
 Receding | and speeding |  
 Dividing | and gliding | and sliding |  
 Retreating | and beating | and meeting | and sheeting |.

But a more careful examination will, I think, in each case show that the normal metre is anapaestic. It would evidently be impossible to read other lines from Browning's *Good News from Ghent* as amphibrachs, e.g.

Not a word | to each oth|er we kept | the great pace |  
 Neck by neck | stride by stride | never chang|ing our place |

Hence the apparent amphibrach must be divided as follows

Dirck gal|loped I gal|loped we gal|loped all three |  
 making *anap.* 4 instead of *amphib.* 4. The fact is, wherever there is a complete anapaestic line, with iambic substitution in the first foot, it will be possible to read it as an amphibrach truncated at the end. In the same way we should divide

There came | to the shore | a poor ex|ile of E|rin.

The lines beginning 'Distracted with care' are shown to be anapaestic by those which follow almost immediately.

To a pre|cipice goes |  
 Where a leap | from 'above |  
 Would soon fin|ish his woes |.

The lines from *Christabel* are preceded by the manifestly anapaestic

In the touch | of this bo|som there lur|keth a spell  
 Which is lord | of thy ut|terance, Chris|tabel |.

As to *Lodore*, the general rhythm is undoubtedly anapaestic; thus in the 1st stanza we have lines like

With its rush | and its roar |  
 As man|y a time |  
 They had seen | it before |.

in the 2nd

It runs | and it creeps |  
 For a while | till it sleeps |  
 In its own | little lake |.

And thence | at depar|ting  
 Awake|ning and star|ting  
 It runs | through the reeds |  
 And away | it proceeds |

where the two middle lines might also be read as amphibrachs.  
 In the 3rd stanza we have

Ri|sing and leap|ing  
 Sink|ing and creep|ing  
 \*       \*       \*  
 Around | and around |  
 With end|less rebound |  
 \*       \*       \*  
 Diz|zying and deaf|ening the ear | with its sound | .

and the last stanza ends

And so | never end|ing but al|ways descend|ing  
 Sounds and mo|tions for ev|er and ev|er are blend|ing,  
 All at once | and all o'er | with a migh|ty uproar |  
 And this | way the wa|ter comes down | at Lodore | .

I think therefore that it is natural to scan the ambiguous lines  
 as anapaests with feminine ending, thus

Collect|ing project|ing.                      Anap. 2  
 Divi|ding and gli|ding and slidi|ng.                      Anap. 3.

Perhaps the following lines from Shakespeare have as much  
 right to be called amphibrachs as any we can find ;

Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere folly ;  
                     Then, heigh ho ! the holly !  
                     This life is most jolly.

but looking at the preceding line, which I should divide

Heigh ho | ! sing heigh ho | ! unto | the green holly.

I think it is best to treat all as anapaestic.

There remains one other method of disguising metre, which  
 I may call the scriptorial, when either verse is written as prose,  
 of which Dickens supplies the most marked examples (see  
*Abbott Lessons*, § 61), or prose as verse, of which plentiful  
 examples may be found in Walt Whitman ; or again when,

though verse is printed as verse, the lines are not divided in accordance with the actual metre employed, as in the 4th line of the following (*G. T.* p. 226) which properly begins with 'delves.'

iamb. 3.      Who makes | the brid|al bed |  
 dact. 2-.      Birdie say | truly | ?  
 iamb. 3.      The gray|-headed sex|ton  
 dact. 2-.      That) delves the grave | duly.

That the true metrical division requires 'that' to be transferred to the previous line, is evident from the corresponding lines in the earlier verses of the same poem.

Sweet Rob|in sits on | the bush |  
 Singing so | rarely.  
 When six | braw gent|lemen |  
 Kirkward shall | carry ye | .

We have had an instance of similar mis-division in Coleridge's *Christabel* (see above p. 93). Compare also what is said below (p. 132) on the line usually printed

Singing to welcome the pilgrims of the night.

The signs + and - may be conveniently used to denote the addition or omission of unaccented syllables whether at the beginning or the end of the verse. Thus the feminine heroic

Cromwell | I charge | thee fling | away | ambi|tion

which shows an extra syllable after the last bar, would be classed as *iamb. 5 +*. The truncated trochaic

Come not | here ^

may be marked with a *caret* after the last accent, and classed as *troch. 2 -*.

A hypermetrical syllable at the beginning of the verse may be marked with a curved line following, as in the line from *Lilian*

(She) looking | through and | through me |

which would be classed as *troch. + 3*; while that from the *Deserted House* would receive both marks,

(So) frequent | on its | hinges be|fore ^

and be classed as *troch.* + 4 -. Conversely an iambic verse, which suffers truncation at the beginning and has a feminine ending, would be thus written

^ Sub|tle-thought|ed myr|iad mind|ed

and described as *iamb.* - 4 +.

In the trisyllabic metres, where there is often a loss of two unaccented syllables, it would be necessary to double the mark; thus the verses

^ ^ Few | and short | were the prayers | we said |  
And we spoke | not a word | of sor|row

would be described as *Anap.* = 4 and 3 +.

Dawn on our | darkness and | lend us thine | aid ^ ^

would be described as *Dact.* 4 =.

Verses with hypermetrical syllables may be conveniently divided into *prashypermetrical* and *post-hypermetrical*, according as the extra syllable comes at the beginning or end; but as the latter are generally known as feminine lines, I shall use hypermetrical in a special sense, of a verse which has the extra syllable at the beginning.

## CHAPTER VII.

### NAMING AND CLASSIFICATION OF METRES.

#### ILLUSTRATED FROM TENNYSON'S POEMS.

I PROPOSE in this chapter to test our metrical analysis upon a writer who furnishes examples of a great variety of rhythms, and as to whose readings and pronunciation there is no question, so that one may argue securely on the facts. Metrical writers are almost as much divided in regard to the general theory of metre and the scansion and naming of particular metres, as they are on the admissible varieties of the five-foot iambic; nor do I know of any one who has given an altogether consistent and satisfactory account of the matter. The best, I think, is that by Dr Abbott in *English Lessons*, but it is incomplete on the trisyllabic metres, and he errs, as we have seen, in the direction of a mechanical regularity.

Before classifying Tennyson's trochaic metres according to the number of feet employed, I must mention a variety which is common to them all, produced by the omission of the last unaccented syllable, thus giving rise to the truncated trochaic, the converse of the feminine iambic. We find examples of the two-foot trochaic, both complete and truncated, in combination with longer metres; of complete in *The Poet*,

In the   middle   leaps a   fountain	(4)
Like sheet   lightning	(2)
Ever   brightening	(2)
With a   low me lodicus   thunder	(4)

and of the truncated in *The Miller's Daughter*—

Love the   gift is   love the   debt ^	(4 -)
Even   so ^	(2 -)

*Deserted House—*

Life and | thought have | gone a|way ^ (4—)  
 Side by | side ^ (2—)

*Poet—*

Hollow | smile and | frozen | sneer ^ (4—)  
 Come not | here ^ (2—)

I do not think Tennyson has any example of the complete three-foot trochaic, such as we find in Baring Gould's hymn for children—

Now the | day is | over | (3)  
 Night is | drawing | nigh ^ (3—)  
 Shadows | of the | evening | (3)  
 Steal a|cross the | sky ^ (3—)

But the truncated form is common in combination with longer metres, as in *Lilian*—

When my | passion | seeks ^  
 Pleasance | in love | sighs ^  
 Then a|way she | flies ^  
 Fairy | Lilian ^

and the *Deserted House*—

Careless | tenants | they ^  
 Here no | longer | dwell ^

In *Maud* xvii. we find twenty-eight consecutive lines in this metre, beginning "Go not | happy | day." In *Lilian* we have specimens of a variation of the complete three-foot trochaic formed by the prefixing of a hypermetrical syllable or anacrusis, analogous to the feminine rhythm in the iambic metre—

She) looking | through and | through me |  
 If) prayers | will not | hush thee |

The four-foot trochaic is by far the commonest, as in *Lilian*—

When I | ask her | if she | love me |  
 Claps her | tiny | hands a|bove me |

*The Poet's Mind—*

Clear and | bright it | should be | ever |  
 Flowing | like a | crystal | river |

*Lady of Shalott—*

Willows | whiten | aspens | quiver |  
 Little | breezes | dusk and | shiver

Usually, however, it alternates with the truncated form, as in  
*Lord of Burleigh*—

Deeply | mourned the | lord of | Burleigh |  
Burleigh | house by | Stamford | town ^

This is the common 8s 7s of the hymn-books, like—

Through the | day thy | love has | spared us |  
Now we | lay us | down to | rest ^

Written as one line we know it as truncated eight-foot, the metre of *Locksley Hall*—

Comrades | leave me | here a | little | while as | yet 'tis | early | dawn.

The truncated four-foot is the metre of the song in the *Vision of Sin*—

Wrinkled | ostler | grim and | thin ^

It is the 7s of hymn-books, the metre of

Hark the | herald | angels | sing ^

*Deserted House* is in the same metre with anacrusis in three of the lines.

So) frequent | on its | hinge before ^  
Or) through the | windows | we shall | see ^  
The) nakedness | and vacancy ^

The complete four-foot is rarely used alone in hymns, as in one of the translations of the *Dies Irae*—

Day of | wrath, O | day of | mourning |  
See once | more the | cross returning |  
Heaven and | earth in | ashes | burning |

Five-foot trochaic is rare in either the complete or truncated form. We find examples of the former in the *Vision of Sin*—

Narrowing | into | where they | sat assembled |  
Low voluptuous | music | winding | trembled |

and in *Wellington*—

He shall | find the | stubborn | thistle | bursting |  
Into | glossy | purples | which out|red |

The rhythm has rather a tendency to run into Canning's *Needy Knife Grinder*, which indeed only differs from it by the insertion



of an unimportant syllable, changing the initial trochee into a dactyl,

Story | 'bless you | I have | none to | tell Sir |

In both the poems just mentioned the truncated form is mixed with the other, *e.g.* in the *Vision of Sin*—

Then me|thought I | heard a | mellow | sound ^  
Gathering | up from | all the | lower | ground ^

and in *Wellington*—

Once the | weight and | fate of | Europe | hung ^  
He that | ever | following | her com|mands ^  
On with | toil of | heart and | knees and | hands ^

Six-foot is also rare. We find in the *Vision of Sin* the complete form—

Purple | gauzes | golden | hazes | liquid | mazes |

and in *Wellington* the truncated

Who is | he that | cometh | like an | honoured | guest ^

also in *Cauteretz*—

All a|long the | valley | stream that | flashest | white ^

I am not aware that Tennyson has any example of the complete seven-foot trochaic, though it has to my ear an easier and more natural rhythm than the five and six-foot trochaics, *e.g.*

In the | glowing | autumn | sunset | in the | golden | autumn |

but we find the truncated form in the *Lotus Eaters*—

We have | had e|nough of | action | and of | motion | we ^

and

Like a | tale of | little | meaning | though the | words be | strong ^

*Locksley Hall* supplies examples of the eight-foot trochaic, both in the complete form, as

Slowly | comes a | hungry | people | as a | lion | creeping | nigher |

and in the truncated form,

Smote the | chord of | self that | trembling | past in | music | out of | sight ^

So the *Lotus Eaters*

Rolled to | starboard | rolled to | larboard | when the | surge was | seeth-  
ing | free ^

In this metre the line is usually divided into two sections after the fourth foot, which I have marked with the double bar, *e.g.*

Comrades | leave me | here a | little || while as | yet 'tis | early | dawn ^

In 194 lines of *Locksley Hall* we find this rule observed in all but forty-two, and in fifteen of these the fourth foot ends with 'and,' which softens the effect, as in

Saw the | vision | of the | world and || all the | wonder | which should | be  
Love took | up the | glass of | time and || turned it | in his | glowing |  
hands

otherwise it has a heavy dragging sound, as in

Many a | night from | yonder | ivied || casement | ere I | sunk to | rest  
What is | fine with|in thee | growing || coarse to | sympa|thize with | clay  
Glares at | one that | nods and | winks be||hind a | slowly | dying | fire

In one line we find both sections truncated—

As I have | seen the | rosy | red || flushing | in the | northern | night

Some have maintained that the basis of the metre is a double trochee with a weaker stress on the first syllable and stronger on the third. There seems no ground for this. If we have

In the | spring a | fuller | crimson | comes up|on the | robin's | breast  
we have also

Mány a | night from | yonder | ivied | casement | ere I | sank to | rest

The rationale of the two sections is of course that the line arose from the juxtaposition of a complete and truncated four-foot trochaic, as

Pilgrims | here on | earth and | strangers || Dwelling | in the | midst of |

In rhythmical effect it resembles the Greek trochaic tetrameter catalectic.

Having thus classified the various trochaic lines to be found in Tennyson, it remains for us to observe how they are combined into poems, and with what irregularities, either accentual.

or syllabic, they are used. One of these irregularities I have already referred to, the anacrusis. It may be well here to give reasons in support of such an explanation of an unaccented syllable at the beginning of the line. Why should not a line beginning thus be regarded as an iambic line? We will take *Lilian*. This is a poem of thirty lines, all but four of which are manifestly trochaic. Why should we wish to assign a distinct rhythm to these four, because they have an iambic beginning, more than we do to iambic lines which have a trochaic ending? Similarly in *A Dirge* we have forty-nine lines, all but four plainly trochaic, and one of these is formed simply by prefixing 'but' to the refrain, "let them rave." In the *Lotus Eaters*, after a number of long trochaic lines, we come to

Than) labour | in the | deep mid | ocean | wind and | wave and | oar  $\wedge$   
 Oh) rest ye | brother | mari|ners we | will not | wander | more  $\wedge$

I should certainly prefer to call these trochaic. The *Valley of Caunterets* and the *Ode on the Duke of Wellington* present several examples of the same kind. No doubt there is a remarkable mixture of the iambic and trochaic rhythms in the latter; but, taking the last eleven lines beginning,

He is | gone who | seemed so | great  $\wedge$

it seems to me better to treat the exceptional lines

Than) any | wreath that | man can | weave him |  
 But) speak no | more of | his re|nown  $\wedge$   
 And) in the | vast cath|edral | leave him |

as examples of anacrusis rather than as iambics. So in the longer lines of stanza vi.

Who is | he that | cometh || like an | honoured | guest  
 With) banner | and with | music || with) soldier | and with | priest  $\wedge$

I should treat the second as a truncated six-foot trochaic, with anacrusis at the beginning of both sections. The line that follows

With a | nation | weeping || and) breaking | on my | rest  $\wedge$

has anacrusis at the beginning of the second section only. *Caunterets* is six-foot truncated,

All along the | valley || stream that | flashest | white  $\wedge$

but anacrusis is freely used at the beginning of either or both sections, as in the first—

For) all a|long the | valley || down thy | rocky | bed ^  
in the second—

Deepen|ing thy | voice with || the) deepening | of the | night ^  
in both—

The) two and | thirty | years were || a) mist that | rolls a|way ^  
and even with two short syllables prefixed to the second section in

Thy) living | voice to | me was || as the) vöice | of the | dead  
This last might of course be treated as a case of iambic intrusion; in either case the second 'voice' is disyllabic. Dr Abbott gives the historical explanation of anacrusis in *English Lessons*, p. 189: "In early English poets syllables which precede the accented syllable are not necessary to the scansion." He gives to such syllables the name of the "catch."

The next irregularity which I will speak of is the substitution of the dactyl in the place of the trochee. Dr Abbott confines this licence to the first foot, and it is, no doubt, most frequent in that position, as in

Thoroughly | to un|do me |  
Wearieth | me May | Lili|an ^  
Shadowy | dreaming | Ade|line ^  
But in a | city | glor|ious ^  
Many a | chance the | years be|get ^

but it is also found in other places, especially in long lines, as in the *Lotus Eaters*—

Where the | wallowing | monster | spouted | his foam | fountains | in the |  
sea ^

*Wellington*—

He that | ever | following | her com|mand ^  
and the *Vision of Sin*—

Moved with | violence | changed in | hue ^  
Caught each | other with | wild gri|maces |  
Half in|visible | to the | view ^  
Wheeling | with pre|cipitate | paces |  
To the | melody | till they | flew ^

This is, however, a very irregular poem, and we should perhaps class the passage among those in which there is an intentional mixture of rhythms, the trochaic and dactylic.

The inversion of the accent is less common than in the iambic metre, but is occasionally found in the first foot, *e.g.*

The gold-eyed | kingcups | fine ^  
 The frail | blue bell | peereth | over |  
 From deep | thought him|self he | rouses |

To speak now of the combination of trochaic lines. We find poems made up of the truncated three-foot, as the seventeenth stanza of *Maud*, but this is I think a solitary instance. The truncated four-foot is common, *e.g.* *The Owl*, *Adeline* (though in this we find anacrusis freely employed, giving an iambic colouring), the song in the *Miller's Daughter*; also the alternation of the complete and truncated four-foot, as in *Lord of Burleigh*. The truncated four-foot is often varied by the intermixture of longer and shorter lines, as in *Lilian* we find it associated with complete four and truncated or hypermetrical three-foot; in *Deserted House* with truncated three and truncated two; in *The Dirge* with hypermetrical four, truncated two and complete four; in *Locksley Hall* we have truncated eight-foot varied by the occasional insertion of a complete line. I reserve the more difficult combinations till we have got the analysis of the trisyllabic metres.

Of the ascending disyllabic, or iambic, metre we find the following varieties in Tennyson: two-foot, as in the *Poet*—

The love | of love |

three-foot—

The la|dy of | Shalott |

three-foot with feminine ending—

In days | of old | Amphi|on

four-foot—

O had | I lived | when song | was great |

four-foot feminine—

She on|ly said | my life | is wea|ry

five-foot—

The mello|w reflex of | a win|ter moon |

five-foot feminine—

The vex|ed ed|dies of | its way|ward bro|ther

six-foot—

Give us | long rest | or death | dark death | or dream|ful ease |

It is | the last | new year | that I | shall ev|er see |

seven-foot (usually divided into four-foot and three-foot)—

I thought | to pass | away | before | but yet | alive | I am |

These are combined into poems as follows: we find three-foot masculine and feminine indiscriminately with anapaestic variations in *Claribel*—

Where Cla|ribel | low li|eth

The bree|zes pause | and die |

But the sol|emn oak | tree sigh|eth

Four-foot alternating with three-foot is very common, as in the *Talking Oak*—

Once more | the gate | behind | me falls |

Once more | before | my face |

It is known in the hymn-books as 'common metre.' Sometimes we have stanzas of 4-4-4-3, as

Of old | sat free|dom on | the heights |

The thun|ders break|ing at | her feet |

Above | her shook | the star|ry lights |

She heard | the tor|rents meet |

And there are other combinations, as in *Sir Galahad*, etc. In *Amphion* and the *Brook* we have four-foot masculine alternating with three-foot feminine. It has usually a light playful touch—

My fat|her left | a park | to me |

But it | is wild | and bar|ren

A gar|den too | with scarce | a tree |

And was|ter than | a war|ren

And out | again | I curve | and flow |

To join | the brim|ming ri|ver

For men | may come | and men | may go |

But I | go on | for ev|er

We find the three-foot line in *Maud*—

In the mead|ow un|der the hall |  
To the death | for their na|tive land |

The four-foot in the *Song*—

For at e|ventide lis|tening ear|nestly |

and in the *Poet's Mind*—

In the heart | of the gar|den the mer|ry bird chants |

The five-foot in *Maud*—

Till I well | could weep | for a time | so sor|did and mean |

And also the six-foot—

Did he fling | himself down | who knows | for a vast | specula|tion had  
failed |

which is the metre of the *Northern Farmer*—

“The Amoigh|ty's a taa|kin of you | to 'issen | my friend” | a said |

The seven-foot in *Sea Fairies*—

^ ^ Whith|er away | from the high | green field | and the hap|py  
bloss|oming shore |

The eight-foot in the same—

^ ^ Whith|er away | lis|ten and stay | mar|iner mar|iner fly | no more |

In this the first, third, and fifth feet are monosyllabic, a licence of which I shall speak directly.

The variations are (1) the iamb, of which all the longer lines quoted afford instances, even in the last foot, where Dr Abbott denies its use (*Lessons*, p. 211). Sometimes a line is made up of these without a single anapaest, as in the *Song*—

A spir|it haunts | the year's | last hours |

The iamb may, of course, be represented by a spondee, as—

And the year's | last rose |

But (2) at the beginning of the line the anapaest may be represented by a monosyllable, the two unaccented syllables disappearing without altering the character of the verse. Thus the line

I would kiss | them often un|der the sea |

is repeated in the form

And kiss | them again | till they | kissed me |

Leave out 'and' and the rhythm is unaltered. This law of the anapaestic metre is not, I think, noticed by Dr Abbott, yet examples of such initial truncation are innumerable. The truncated two-foot is found in the *Merman*—

^ ^ Who | would be |  
 ^ A mer | man bold |  
 ^ ^ Sit|ting alone |  
 ^ ^ Sing|ing alone |  
 ^ ^ Un|der the sea |  
 With a crown | of gold |  
 ^ ^ On | a throne |

truncated three-foot in *Maud*—

Maud | with her ex|quisite face |

truncated four-foot in the same—

Sing|ing alone | in the morn|ing of life |

truncated five-foot—

Knew | that the death|white cur|tain meant | but sleep |

truncated six-foot—

Why | do they prate | of the bless|ings of peace | who have made | them a  
 curse |

Glo|ry of war|rrior glo|ry of or|ator glo|ry of song |

It may be asked what reason is there for calling these lines 'metamorphous anapaestic,' rather than 'metamorphous dactylic'? The answer has been already given in the preceding chapter; it is that the rhythm of the lines must be interpreted by the general rhythm of the piece, and all the lines quoted come from passages, which are either distinctly anapaestic, or which at any rate contain lines which can only be explained as anapaestic, while they have no lines which must necessarily be taken as dactylic. Thus the last line, taken alone, would naturally be classed as truncated dactylic; but in the same poem (*Wages*) we find the indisputable anapaest

The wa|ges of sin | is death | if the wa|ges of vir|tue be dust |  
 She desires | no isles | of the bleat | no quiet seats | of the just |.



So in Byron we have

Bright   be the place   of thy soul	(= 3)
No love lier spir it than thine	(- 3)
E'er burst   from its mor tal control	(- 3)
In the orbs   of the bless ed to shine	(3)

Verses like these were long a puzzle to me. Their melody was indubitable, but I could not see what was the scientific account of the rhythm till I was struck by the analogy with the old monosyllabic initial foot in the iambic line.

Besides these main variations, we find the use of feminine rhythm; as in *Maud*—

Ah what   shall I be   at fifty
If I find   the world   so bit ter.
And she knows   it not   oh if   she knew   it
To know   her beau ty might half   undo   it.

The anapaestic rhythm is a great favourite with Tennyson, especially in his later poems. It is used with much freedom as regards the number of feet employed. One of the most uniform in this respect is the *Welcome to Alexandra*, written in the four-foot anapaest. Initial truncation is very common: in fact there is only one line which commences with the pure anapaest—

We are each | all Dane | in our wel|come of thee |

In one line we have initial and sectional truncation—

Roll   and rejoice   ju bilant voice
Roll   as a ground swell dashed   on the strand

The two-foot trochaic 'Alexandra' forms a refrain.

The six-foot anapaest is used in many important poems, as the two *Northern Farmers*, the *Grandmother*, the *Higher Pantheism*, *Wages*, a good deal of *Maud*, *Rizpah*, *First Quarrel*, *Northern Cobbler*, *Entail*, *Children's Hospital*, *Maeldune*, and the very irregular *Revenge*. I will notice here a few peculiarities in the use of the metre. In the *Grandmother* we have two lines which would naturally be read as instances of the seven-foot anapaest—

Seventy years | ago | my dar|ling se|venty years | ago |

but this may be reduced to six by reading the first 'seventy' as a disyllable. In the other, a seven-foot line could only be avoided by the heroic remedy of giving four syllables to the first foot—

And whit whit whit | in the bush | beside | me chir|rupt the night|ngale |

The first four sections of *Maud* are in six-foot anapaest. There is a considerable variety in the use of the metre. In section iii. almost every line suffers initial truncation, which is rare in section i. In section iv. we find the usual break in the middle of the line disregarded, *e.g.*

• Half lost | in the li|quid a|zure bloom | of a cres|cent of sea |  
The si|lent sap|phire-spang|led mar|riage ring | of the law |

The normal line of the *Revenge* is also six-foot anapaest, as

He had on|ly a hun|dred sea|men to work | the ship | and to fight |  
Sir Rich|ard spoke | and he laughed | and we roared | a hurrah | and so |

This is occasionally divided into two sections, sometimes rhyming, as

And the half | my men | are sick ||. I must fly | but fol|low quick |  
and admitting a superfluous syllable after either section, or both, as

Then sware | Lord Thom|as How|ard ||: 'Fore God | I am | no cow|ard  
By their moun|tain-like | San Phil|ip || that of fif|teen hun|dred guns |

We sometimes find initial truncation giving rise to a trochaic rhythm in the first half of the line, as

▲Thou|sands of | their sol|diers || looked down | from their decks | and  
laughed |

It admits also lines varying in length from two to seven feet, as

Anap. 2. And a day | less or more |  
At sea | or ashore |

sometimes truncated

▲Long | and loud |

Anap. 3. So they watched | what the end | would be |

Anap. 4. But Sir Rich|ard cried | in his Eng|lish pride |

In two instances a pyrrhic takes the place of an anapaest, unless we give four syllables to one foot,

But he rose | ūpŏn | their decks | and he cried |  
And he fell | upon | their decks | and he died |

*Anap. 5.* And a wave | like the wave | that is raised | by an earth|-quake  
grow |

7. And the sun | went down | and the stars | came out | far o|ver the  
sum|mer sea |

### Truncated in

Λ God | of bat|tles, was ev|er a bat|tle like this | in the world | before |

The three-foot anapaest is usually combined with others; thus in *Maud* (sections v. and vi.) it is joined with four-foot and occasional five-foot lines. In vii. we have the three-foot preserved throughout, sometimes with feminine rhythm, except for two four-foot lines; viii. is a mixture of three-foot and four-foot; ix. joins two, three, and four-foot. In x. the first three stanzas are of four feet, the fourth and fifth mixed of three and four; xi. is three-foot throughout; xii. is mainly three-foot, but has occasional four-foot lines, and is disguised by prevalent truncation and feminine rhythm; xiii. is almost entirely four-foot, with only three lines of three feet; xiv. is mainly three-foot, but rises into four and even five-foot; xv. is four-foot, with one line of two-foot; xvi. mainly four varied with three and two. In xvii. and xviii. the feeling changes to a tone of more assured happiness, and we have a corresponding change in the rhythm, xvii. consisting of truncated three-foot trochaic, and xviii. (perhaps the most perfect example of the flowing richness of Tennyson's rhythm) consisting of iambic with anapaestic variation, in lines varying from two to six feet. The four which follow are three and four-foot anapaests. The more passionate movement of xxiii. (Pt. II 1 in new arrangement) shows itself in three, four, and five-foot anapaestic lines, with occasional iambic variation; xxiv. (Pt. II 2) is three and four-foot anapaest, with marked initial truncation; xxv. (Pt. II 3) and xxvi. (Pt. II 4) three and four-foot anapaest, with iambic variation, the latter also with feminine ending; xxvii. (Pt. II 5), as suits its subject, is the most violent in rhythm of any, consisting

of anapaestic lines, varying from two to five feet in length, and showing examples not only of initial truncation, as in

Dead | long dead |

but of monosyllabic feet in other parts of the verse, e.g.

Long | dead |  
And the hoofs | of the hor|ses beat | beat |

The last section of *Maud* is regular five-foot anapaest.

In "Break, break, break," we have three-foot anapaest arranged in verses of four lines. In three verses the third line contains four feet, and in two the first line is represented by the three monosyllables "Break, break, break." The *Poet's Song* is mainly four-foot, but is varied by several three-foot lines. In the *Song* "A spirit haunts," the metre is variously four, two, and one-foot. The song in *Sea Fairies* varies from three to eight-foot, and truncation, as I mentioned above, is very freely used: thus we have

Whit|ther away || whit|her away || whit|her away || fly | no more ||

the line being divided into four sections, admits of four monosyllabic feet. In the *Islet* the four-foot anapaest prevails—

Whit|her O whit|her love | shall we go |

varied with three-foot—

That it makes | one wea|ry to hear |

truncated two-foot—

No | love no |

and complete five-foot running into pure iambic—

With ma|ny a riv|ulet high | against | the sun |  
• The fa|cets of | the glor|ious moun|tain flash |

The *Flower* has been treated above as a specimen of iambic, but it might be viewed as a three-foot anapaest, broken by one four-foot, and with prevailing disyllabic substitution—

Once | in a gold|en hour |  
I cast | to earth | a seed |

The *Victim* is mainly four-foot, with disyllabic substitution—

A plague | upon | the people fell |  
 The priest | in hor|ror about | his alt|ar  
 To Thor | and O|din lift|ed a hand |  
 The mother said | they have ta|ken the child |  
 Sud|denly from | him breaks | his wife |

But some of the verses are followed by lines of two feet, forming groups equivalent to eight-foot lines in rhythm, *e.g.*

Help | us from fa|mine And plague | and strife || What | would you have |  
 of us? Hu|man life |

But, it may be said, is it not easier to take these as dactylic, dividing as follows

Help us from | famine And | plague and | strife ^ ^  
 What would you | have of us? | Human | life ^ ^

the two last dactyls being represented by trochee and long syllable? The answer is that in either case the metre will be metamorphous or disguised, and that we shall best preserve the unity of the poem by interpreting the disguise so as to agree with the undisguised corresponding lines in other stanzas, *e.g.*

They have ta|ken our son | They will have | his life |  
 Is he | your dear|est Or I | the wife | ?

The same question arises about the metre of *Lucknow*, which may be generally represented by the following scheme

-----

Is this to be treated as anapaestic or dactylic? That is, at which end of the line must the inevitable truncation be placed? Are we to regard the first syllable as representing an anapaest, or the last as representing a dactyl? The pauses sometimes seem to suit the one, sometimes the other. If the question had to be settled for each line taken separately, we should, I think, naturally scan the first of the two which follow as a dactyl, and the second as an anapaest, as marked by the bars;

Bullets would | sing by our | foreheads and | bullets would | rain at our |  
 feet ^ ^

^ ^ Mine? | yes a mine | Counter|mine | . Down, down | and creep |  
 through the hole |

There is no difficulty however in scanning the first as anapaestic, while it is almost impossible to scan the second as dactylic; and the refrain

And ev|er upon | the top|most roof | our ban|ner of Eng|land blew |  
(thus schematized  $\cup-\cup-\cup-\cup-\cup-\cup-\cup-\cup-$ ) is more easily divided into seven iambs or anapaests than into seven dactyls with anacrusis and final truncation.

The dactylic metre is much more rarely used than the anapaest. There is, I think, only one example of the pure dactyl, viz. the *Light Brigade*. The essential point of course is that the stress is not on the last syllable—

Half a league | half a league |  
Half a league | onward |

The metre is two-foot, with frequent substitution of the trochee for the second foot. Sometimes the rhythmical stress is opposed to the verbal accent, as in

While horse and | hero fell |

We do not find in Tennyson the monosyllable for the dactyl, as in Hood's

Take her up | tenderly |  
Lift her with | care ^ ^

In Heber's hymn—

Brightest and | best of the | sons of the | morning ^  
Dawn on our | darkness and | lend us thine | aid ^ ^

we have the last foot represented alternately by a monosyllable and a trochee.

The last line of the alcaic stanza might be described as a four-foot dactyl with trochaic substitution in the last two feet—

Milton a | name to re|sound for | ages |

•

Since the different metres are thus capable of interchange and transmutation, it is easy to understand how a poem commencing in one metre will run into another. Thus *Madeline* begins with two iambic lines (4 + and 4), the third line is truncated four-foot trochaic; the fourth again is four-foot iambic; fifth

trochaic truncated; sixth and seventh iambic; and so, throughout, the two rhythms alternate. The *Deserted House* is one in which trochaic rhythm passes into iambic. In *Oriana* the second and third verses have a predominant trochaic rhythm, while the others are iambic with the trochaic refrain. The *Lady of Shalott* begins with iambic, but there are many pure trochaic stanzas. *Eleanore* is mainly iambic, with anapaestic variation—

With the hum | of swar|ming bees |  
Into dream|ful slumb|er lulled |

but in stanza iv. changes to trochaic, *e.g.*

How may | full-sailed | verse ex|press ^  
How may | measured | words ad|ore ^

The Choric Song in *Lotus Eaters* begins with iambic, of length varying from three to six feet. In the third stanza we find frequent trochaic substitution, *e.g.*

Nightly | dew-fed | and tur|ning yellow

and initial truncation,

Falls | and floats | adown | the air |

which prepares us for the trochaic commencement of iv.,

Hateful | is the | dark-blue | sky  
Vaulted | o'er the | dark-blue | sea

and for the series of long trochaics (seven and eight-foot) which end the piece. In the *Vision of Sin* the rhythms are appropriated to separate sections of the poem, and express different tones of thought. In the *Ode on Wellington* we have anapaestic rhythm in the first and fifth stanzas, iambic in third, fourth, and seventh, trochaic mixed in sixth, eighth, and ninth.

Iambic is found mixed with anapaest, sometimes irregularly, sometimes according to a fixed law. Thus *Mariana in the South* is regular four-foot iambic, but the last two lines have invariably the trisyllabic rhythm—

And ah | she sang | to be all | alone |  
To live | forgot|ten and die | forlorn |

Similarly, *The Sisters*, which is in regular four-foot iambic, is broken by the trisyllabic refrain

The wind | is how|ling in tur|ret and tree |

In *The Daisy* the stanza consists of four four-foot iambic lines, the third with feminine rhythm, and the fourth with anapaestic substitution in third place—

I stood | among | the sill|ent stat|ues  
And stat|ued pin|nacles mute | as they |

In the *Verses to Maurice* the first three lines are the same as in the *Daisy*, but the fourth has anapaestic substitution in the second place as well as the third, and the first foot is a monosyllable; with which the superfluous syllable of the preceding line naturally connects itself—

• And fur|ther on | the hoar|y chan|nel  
Tum|bles a break|er on chalk | and sand |

Of course it is possible to treat the fourth line as dactylic, with the substitution of a trochee for the third and a monosyllable for the fourth dactyl. In that case the last two lines of the verse would be a slight modification of the alcaic

God-gifted organ voice of England  
Milton a name to resound for ages

this latter having two trochees at the end of the fourth line.

Of irregular mixture we have many examples. *The Dying Swan* begins with four-foot varied by three-foot iambic: the third line suffers initial truncation: anapaestic substitution is frequent—

With an in|ner voice | the riv|er ran |  
Adown | it float|ed a dy|ing swan |

In the second stanza the anapaestic character becomes more marked, and in the third it becomes pure anapaestic. *The May Queen* commences with seven-foot iambic, with free anapaestic substitution, as in

And the wild | marsh mar|igold shines | like fire | in swamps | and  
hol|lows gray |  
And the riv|ulet in | the flow|ery dale | will mer|rily dance | and play |

Occasionally we have six-foot iambs, *e.g.*

If you do | not call | me loud | when the day | begins | to break |  
As I | came up | the val|ley || whom think | ye should | I see |



We have one example of initial truncation, accompanied by feminine caesura,

All | the val|ley mo|ther || will be fresh | and green | and still |

One line appears to have eight feet, unless we compress four syllables into the first, or make 'so' extra-metrical—

So you | must wake | and call | me ear|ly call | me ear|ly mo|ther dear |

There is some difficulty in the rhythm of the following—

For I would see the sun rise upon the glad new year.

To-night I saw the sun set : he set and left behind.

In each there is a superfluous syllable at the end of the third foot, which it is hardly possible to connect with what follows as the first syllable of an anapaest, because the word itself requires some stress, and in the second line is followed by a decided pause. I am inclined to think we must treat *rise* and *set* as monosyllabic feet.<sup>1</sup>

*Death of the Old Year* is mainly three or four-foot iambic, but we find it diversified with anapaests as marked as

He gave | me a friend | and a true | true love |

And the new | year will take | 'em away |

Some lines show initial truncation, *e.g.*

Toll | ye the church-|bell sad | and slow |

And | tread soft|ly and | speak low |

Ev|ery one | for his own |

*Lady Clare* is in four-line stanzas of four-foot iambics, diversified with three-foot. Some verses are regular, but in most there is a strong anapaestic colouring, *e.g.*

Are ye out | of your mind | my nurse | my nurse |

Said La|dy Clare | that ye speak | so wild |

There are several examples of initial truncation, as

Dropt | her head | in the maid|en's hand |

The *Flower* has been already mentioned. The *Ringlet* is

<sup>1</sup> Mr Roby compares the 73rd line of the *Atys*

*jam jam dolet quod est, jam jamque pœnitat*

and refers to his *School Lat. Gr.* § 934.

about equally divided between iambic and anapaestic. Beginning with the feminine anapaest—

Your ring|lets your ring|lets

it proceeds with five regular iambs, and then bursts into the strong anapaests—

And then | shall I know | it is all | true gold |  
To flame | and spark|le and stream | as of old |

falling back into the quiet iambic—

And all | her stars | decay |

It contains three examples of initial truncation—

• I | that took | you for | true gold |  
She | that gave | you's bought | and sold |  
Burn | you glos|sy her|etic burn |

and the refrain consists in two instances of monosyllabic feet—

Sold, sold,  
Burn, burn.

as may be seen by comparing the intermediate refrain—

You gold|en lie |

The *Victim* begins with regular four-foot iambic, breaking into anapaestic towards the end of each eight-line stanza, as

The priest | in hor|ror about | his al|tar  
To Thor | and O|din lifted a hand |  
He caught | her away | with a sud|den cry |

*Maud* contains several instances of mixed iambic and anapaestic, cf. xi., xviii., xxiii.

I proceed now to mixed trochaic metres. The mixture of trochaic and iambic has been already treated of. Trochaic, varied by the intermixture of dactyls according to a fixed law, is found in *Boadicea*, which is mainly eight-foot trochaic, sometimes complete, but usually truncated, with one or more dactyls in the last three feet—

While a|bout the | shore of | Mona || those Ne|ronian | legiona|ries |  
Girt by | half the | tribes of | Britain || near the | colony | Camulo|dune

In the following we have four consecutive dactyls—

There the | hive of | Roman | liars || worship a | gluttonous | emperor | idiot |

I think the rhythm would have been improved by omitting *emperor*, thus making a truncated eight-foot: but the final dactyl, giving eight complete feet, is also found in

Hear it | gods the | gods have | heard it || O I|cenian | O Cori|tanian |  
 Tho' the | Roman | eagle | shadow thee || though the | gathering | enemy |  
       narrow thee |  
 Up my | Britons | on my | chariot || on my | chargers | trample them  
       under us |

In one line we find three dactyls in the first half—

Bloodily | bloodily | fall the | battle-axe || unex|hausted in|exora|ble

There is only one line in which the dactylic substitution is not found in the last three feet—

There they | dwelt and | there they | rioted || thére | there they | dwell no |  
       more

The metre is in length and in trisyllabic final rhythm an imitation of the *Atys* of Catullus, of which the type is

Phrygium nemus citato || cupide | pede te|tigit |

As might be expected, a pyrrhic often represents the trochee.

The *Poet's Mind* begins with four and three-foot trochaic, but passes by a rather unusual combination into anapaestic—

Holy | water | will I | pour |  
 Into | every | spicy | flower |  
 Of the lau|rel shrubs | that hedge | it around |  
 In your eye | there is death |  
 There is frost | in your breath |

The hendecasyllabic is a five-foot trochaic, in which the second foot is a dactyl—

Look I | come to the | test a | tiny | poem |  
 All com|posed in a | metre | of Ca|tullus |

I think I have now noticed all the metres which occur in Tennyson, except his alcaics. These being, like the hendecasyllabics, pure imitation from a foreign source, might be omitted in an examination of English metres; but they admit of simple analysis in the terms which I have employed. The

first two lines are made up of five iambs, the fourth of which suffers anapaestic substitution<sup>1</sup>,

O might|y mouthed | inven|tor of har|monies |

The final iambic is usually pyrrhic, so as to give the impression of a double dactyl at the end, and we might if we pleased describe the line as consisting of two sections, the first a two-foot iambic with feminine ending, the second two dactyls. The third line is four-foot feminine—

God-gift|ed or|gan voice | of Eng|land

The fourth, two dactyls followed by two trochees—

Milton a | name to re|sound for | ages |

It has been observed that Tennyson's classical metres are conformed to the law of quantitative, as well as of accentual rhythm.

<sup>1</sup> On the alcaic metre Mr Roby refers to his *School Gr.* § 936 and p. 366 s.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### NAMING AND CLASSIFICATION OF METRES.

#### ILLUSTRATED FROM THE HYMN-BOOK.

I PROCEED now to test our metrical analysis on the hymns contained in the ordinary collections, such as *Hymnal Companion* and *Hymns Ancient and Modern*. In old-fashioned hymn-books each hymn is marked with certain mystic signs, which serve as guide-posts to the corresponding tunes. Sometimes these marks are references to psalms of the same metre in the old version by Sternhold and Hopkins; thus 'ps. 104' denotes an eight-line stanza of anap. 2

Oh wór|ship the Kíng || All-gló|rious abóve |

'ps. 148' denotes an eight-line stanza, four lines consisting of 3 iambs, and four of 2 iambs, as

Ye bound|less réalms | of jóy || Exált | your Má|ker's náme |  
His praise | your song | employ || Above | the star|ry frame |  
Your voi|ces raise |                      Ye cher|ubim |  
And ser|aphim |                      To sing | his praise |

Sometimes they denote the number of syllables in each line; thus 8s 7s stands for a stanza of alternate troch. 4 and troch. 3, as in

Thróugh the | dáy thy | lóve has | spáred us |  
Now we | lay us | down to | rest ^

7s 6s stands for alternate iamb 3 + and iamb 3, as

From Greén|land's f|ey moun|tains  
From In|dia's cor|al strand |

It is evident that the same figures might have been used for

the converse rhythms, thus 8s 7s might have stood for an iambic stanza of 4 and 3 + feet alternately, such as

The Lórd | of míght | on S[í]nai's brów |  
Gave forth | his voice | of thun|der

But the great majority are marked LM, SM, CM, PM, denoting respectively Long, Short, Common, and Peculiar Measures. The first three are four-line iambic stanzas; in LM all the lines contain 4 iambs; in SM the third line has 4, the rest 3 iambs; in CM the first and third have 4, the alternate lines 3 iambs. Peculiar Measure is the general receptacle for all hymns that do not come under any of the other heads.

We will begin by classifying all under their genera, Iambic, Trochaic, Dactylic, Anapaestic, and Mixed; subdividing them into species according to the number of feet, and mentioning any particular varieties which are found in each species.

IAMBIC. *Stanzas of not more than four lines*<sup>1</sup>.

3.2.3.3 The sun is sinking fast, The daylight dies.

3.3.3.3 We love the place O Lord, Wherein thine honour dwells.

3+.3.3+.3 Brief life is here our portion, Brief sorrow, short-lived care.

var. There's a friend for little children Above the bright blue sky.

[Here an anapaest is substituted for the first iamb in every stanza.]

3.3.4.2 The God of Abraham praise, Who reigns enthroned above.  
Ancient of everlasting days, And God of love.

3.3.4.3 (SM) My soul repeat his praise.

4.3.4.2 Our bless'd Redeemer ere He breathed.

4.3.4.3 (CM) God moves in a mysterious way.

3+.3.4.3 I want to be like Jesus, So lowly and so meek;  
For no one marked an angry word, That ever heard him speak.

4.3+.4.3+ The King of love my Shepherd is,  
Whose goodness faileth never.

4.4.4.-2 Fierce raged the tempest o'er the deep,  
Watch did thine anxious servants keep,  
. But thou | wast wrapped | in dream|less sleep |  
^ Calm | and still |

<sup>1</sup> I include under this all stanzas, though they may contain more than four lines, which merely repeat the metre.



[There is a dactylic ring about these verses, and the sixth line in each stanza is irregular. In the second and third stanzas it seems to begin with an anapaest ('when from sin,' 'be a crown'): in the first with a dactyl ('worthy is'). I think however that the line 'And bright | above | the sun |' is too decisively iambic to allow of the hymn being assigned to any other genus.]

- 3.3+.3.3+.3.3.3.3 Now thank we all our God  
 With heart and hands and voices.  
 3+.3.3+.3.4.4 The day is past and over, All thanks O Lord to thee.  
 3+.3+.2.2.3+ (twice) Head of the church triumphant,  
 We joyfully adore thee;  
 Till thou appear,  
 Thy members here  
 Shall sing like those in glory.  
 4.3.4.3.3.3.3.3 O Paradise, O Paradise,  
 Who doth not crave for rest.  
 4.3.4.3.4.4 Lord of my life whose tender care.  
 4.4.3.4.4.3 O Lord how happy should we be  
 If we could cast our care on thee  
 If we from self could rest.  
 4.4.3+.4.4.4.3+ For ever to behold him shine  
 For evermore to call him mine  
 And see him still before me.  
 4.3.4.4.3 Eight days amid this world of woe  
 The holy Babe had been.  
 4.3.4.3.4.3 *var.* Father I know that all my life.  
 [Frequent anapaestic substitution in the first foot.]

- 4.4.4.4.2.2.4 Lord of the harvest, thee we hail.  
 3.3:4.3.4.4 Change is our portion here.  
 4.3+.4.3+.4.3+.4.3+.4.4 O Rock of Ages, since on thee  
 By grace my feet are planted.  
 4.2.4.2.4.2 My God I thank thee, who hast made  
 The earth so bright.  
 4.3+.4.3+.4.4.3+ (Luther's Hymn)  
 Great God what do I see and hear.  
 3+.3 (four times repeated) *var.* The sands of time are sinking.  
 [The eighth line of each stanza seems to be iamb - 3, thus

\* In | Emman|uel's land | ]

- 4.3.4.3.4.3.3+.3 *var.* Brother thou art gone before us.



[In this very irregular hymn of Milman's, the normal verse is shown to be iambic by such lines as

The toilsome way thou'st travelled o'er  
And borne the heavy load;

but there is frequent anapaestic substitution in the first foot; the first line of the first stanza and the sixth line regularly have a feminine ending; and several lines suffer initial truncation, as

^Earth | to earth | and dust | to dust |  
^Sin | can ne|ver taint | thee now]

2.5.5.5.2 Come labour on,

Who dares stand idle on the harvest plain.

5.2.5.2.5.2 O Lord my God, do thou thy holy will.

I will lie still.

5+.5.5+.5.5.5 Thou knowest, Lord, the weariness and sorrow  
Of the sad heart that comes to thee for rest.

5.2.5.2.5.5

Lead kindly Light amid the incircling gloom, Lead thou me on.

**TROCHAIC.** *Stanzas of not more than four lines.*

3.3-.3.3- Now the | day is | over |

Night is | drawing | nigh ^

3.3.3.3 Jesu meek and lowly.

4.3-.4.2- Art thou weary, art thou languid,  
Art thou sore distressed?

4-.4-.4-.3- Three in One and One in Three.

4-.4-.4-.2- Christian seek not yet repose.

4-.4-.4-.4- ('7s') Hark the herald angels sing.  
(triplet) Lord in this thy mercy's day.

4-.4.4-.4 Jesus lives; no longer now

Can thy terrors, death, appal us.

4.4-.4.4- Jesus calls us o'er the tumult

Of our life's wild restless sea.

4.4.4 (triplet) Day of wrath, O day of mourning.

**TROCHAIC.** *Stanzas of more than four lines.*

3-.3-.4.4.3-.3- Jesus still lead on

Till our rest be won.

4.4-.4.4-.2.4- Lo! He comes with clouds descending.

4.4-.4.4-.2.2.4- Lead us, heavenly Father, lead us.

4.4-.4.4-.4-.4- Who are these like stars appearing.

4.4-.4.4-.4.4 Once in royal David's city.

4.4-.4.4.4- O the bitter shame and sorrow.



- 4.3 4.3    ^ I think | when I read | that sweet sto|ry of old |  
                   ^ When Je|sus was here | among men |  
*var.*    ^ ^ Christ | is gone up | with a joy|ful sound |  
                   He is gone | to his bright | abode |

[Monosyllabic substitution common in first foot, iambic in first and last.]

- 4.4.4.4    O Thou | that dwell'st | in the heav|ens high |  
                   Above | yon stars | and within | yon sky |

[Iambic substitution common in all the feet.]

- 4.3.4.3.4.4    There were nine|ty and nine | that safe|ly lay |  
                   In the shel|ter of | the fold |

[Iambic substitution common in all the feet, and monosyllabic in first foot.]

- 4+.4.4+.4

Thou art gone | to the grave | but we will | not deplore | thee  
                   Though sor|rows and dark|ness encom|pass the tomb |

[Iambic substitution in first foot.]

### MIXED. *Iambic and trochaic.*

Alternate iamb. 3, troch. 3 — (thrice).

We close | the wea|ry eye |  
                   Saviour | ever | near ^  
                   We lift | our souls | on high |  
                   Through the | darkness | drear ^

Alt. troch. 4 —, iamb: 3 (four times, except iamb. 4 in sixth line). Printing two lines in one, we may describe this as troch. 7 —, 7 —, 8 —, 7 —.

God of | my sal|vation | hear ^  
                   And help | me to believe |  
                   Simply | do I | now draw | near ^  
                   Thy bles|sing to | receive |  
                   Dust and | ashes | is my | name ^  
                   My all | is sin | and mis|ery |  
                   Friend of | sinners | spotless | Lamb ^  
                   Thy blood | was shed | for me |

[This hymn is by C. Wesley, who has another in the same metre beginning

Lamb of | God whose | bleeding | love ^]

Troch. 6. 7 — . 6, iamb. 5.      \*

Holy | holy | holy | all the | saints a|dore thee |  
 Casting | down their | golden | crowns a|round the | glassy | sea ^  
 Cheru|bim and | seraphim | falling | down be|fore thee |  
 Which wert | and art | and ev|ermore | shalt be |

[In the third line 'seraphim' is a dactyl for trochee. In the lines which follow we must disyllabize 'Lord' and 'our' to preserve the metre, unless we think that the solemnity of the subject justifies a monosyllabic foot in the former case.]

Holy | holy | holy | Lo|rd | God Al|mighty |  
 • Early | in the | morning | o|ur | song shall | rise to | thee ^]

Troch. 4, iamb. 2, troch. 4, iamb. 2, troch. 4. 4. 4, iamb. 2.

God that | madest | earth and | heaven |  
 Darkness | and light |  
 Who the | day for | toil hast | given |  
 For rest | the night |  
 May thine | angel | guards de|fend us |  
 Slumber | sweet thy | mercy | send us |  
 Holy | dreams and | hopes at|tend us |  
 This live|long night |

Iambic SM with trochaic refrain 2. 4 — .

From E|gypt's bon|dage come |  
 Where death | and dark|ness reign |  
 We seek | our new | our bet|ter home |  
 Where we | our rest | shall gain |  
 Halle|lujah |  
 We are | on our | way to | God ^

Troch. 4 — . 4 — , iamb. 3, trochaic refrain 3. 3. 3. 4 — .

Here we | suffer | grief and | pain ^  
 Here we | meet to | part a|gain ^  
 In heaven | we part | no more |  
 O that | will be | joyful |  
 Joyful | joyful | joyful |  
 O that | will be | joyful |  
 • When we | meet to | part no | more ^

[The ranting tune makes the refrain dactylic, turning *O* and *joyful* into trisyllables.]

The long irregular hymn beginning "The strain upraise," consists of iambic lines varying from 3.3+ .4.5.5+ to 7 feet, and closes with troch. 4-. A few lines are given as specimens.

iamb. 5+ Here let | the moun|tains thun|der forth | son|orous

iamb. 7 This is | the strain | the eter|nal strain | the Lord | of all |  
things loves |

troch. 4- Now from | all men | be out|poured ^

*Iambic with dactylic refrain.*

Iamb. 5 + .5.5 + .5, dact. 2 - .2 = .2 -, iamb. 3.

Hark, hark | my soul | angel|ic songs | are swelling  
O'er earth's | green fields | and o|cean's wave|beat shore |

\*                      \*                      \*                      \*

Angels of | Jesus ^  
Angels of | light ^ ^  
Singing to | welcome ^  
The pil|grims of | the night |

I cannot help thinking that the metre of the last line must have been intended to be dactylic, and that 'the' before 'night' either crept in by mistake, or that we should read *o' th' night*. Its metrical index would then be dact. + 2 =.

*Iambic with anapaestic refrain.*

Iamb. 3 + .3 (four times).

When his | salva|tion bring|ing  
To Zi|on Je|sus came |

refrain, anap. 3.

^ Hosan|na to Je|sus they sang |

*Trochaic and dactylic.*

Dact. 2.2.3 - .2 - .2 -, troch. 4 -.

O most | merciful |  
O most | bountiful |  
God the | Father Al|mighty ^  
By the Re|deemer's ^  
Sweet inter|cession ^  
Hear us | help us | when we | cry ^

*Trochaic and anapaestic.*

Troch. 4 . 4 - . 4 . 4 - . 4, anap. 3 + . 3 + . 3.

Shall we | gather | at the | river |  
 Where bright | angel | feet have | trod ^  
 \*            \*            \*            \*  
 \*            \*            \*            \*

Yes we'll | gather | at the | river |  
 ^ The beau|tiful beau|tiful riv|er  
 Gather with | the saints | at the riv|er  
 ^ That flows | by the throne | of God |

*A Riddle.*

It seems at first sight impossible to reduce to rule Oakley's translation of *Adeste Fideles*. What common scheme will suit the two following stanzas?

O cóme, all ye faithful,  
 Jóyful and triúmphant,  
 O cóme ye, O cóme ye to Béthlehém;  
 Cóme and behóld him  
 Bórn the Kíng of ángels:  
 Gód of Gód,  
 Líght of Líght,  
 Ló he abhórs not the Vírgin's wómb;  
 Véry Gód,  
 Begóttén nó created.

It looks as though there were no more regularity of rhythm in them than in the words of a chanted psalm, where the number and accent of the syllables bear no fixed relation to the musical notes; and certainly the translator in his desire to reproduce the literal sense, has been much more erratic in his metre than the original. In the Latin, the first line of the second verse, *Deum de Deo*, is only one syllable short of *Adeste fideles*, the first line of the first verse, and, in singing, the first syllable of *Deum* occupies the same time as the two first of *adeste*, while the English is three syllables short. We may observe that even in the English, the accents correspond, and I think by comparing the different verses and picking out the more regular lines we may make out a common scheme, and explain the variations, thus

dact. 2 -	Síng choírs of   ángels ^
troch. 3	Síng in   éxul tátion
dact. 2 -, iamb. 2	Ló he ab hórs not   the Vír gin's wómb
dact. 2 -	Wórd of the   Fáther ^
troch. 3	Nów in   físh ap peáring
refrain, iamb. 3 + . 3 + . 5	
	O come   let us   adore   him
	O come   let us   adore   him
	O come   let us   adore   him, Christ   the Lord

If this is the correct scheme, the first verse departs from it by anacrusis in the 1st and 3rd lines, and the second verse represents the two dactyls of the 1st and 4th lines by a trochee and monosyllable, and has anacrusis in the 5th line. Its 2nd line departs furthest both from the normal line and from the Latin *lumen de lumine*, as it has only two trochees (troch. 2 -) where there ought to be three. The third verse also varies in its 3rd, 4th, and 5th lines.

dact. 2, iamb. 2	Síng all ye   citizens   of heaven   above
dact. 2 =	Glory to   God ^ ^
troch. 2	In the   highest

## CHAPTER IX.

### BLANK VERSE OF SURREY AND MARLOWE.

THE earliest specimen of English blank verse, that is, of the unrhyming five-foot iambic, is found in the translation of the second and fourth books of the *Æneid* by the Earl of Surrey, beheaded Jan. 1547, in the 30th year of his age. In the edition by Mr Bell it is said (p. 141), that 'the dexterity with which he manages his metre prevents it from falling with monotony on the ear', 'he mixes the iambic and trochaic feet so skilfully, that his constancy to the measure escapes observation in the pleasure derived from the music with which he fills it'; yet 'crudenesses of sundry kinds are by no means infrequent'; 'the ear is sometimes wounded by such lines as these

By the divine science of Minerva.'

Mr Symonds on the other hand, as we have seen above (p. 53), joins him with Sackville, Greene and Peele as being very averse 'to any departure from iambic regularity'. We will endeavour to give a more exact account of the matter. The initial trochee is as common in Surrey as in Milton. It is often found in combination with a trochee in the third foot, as

- p. 152. He with | his hands | strave to | unloose | the knots |  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 0 & & 0 & 1 & & 2 & 0 & & 0 & 1 & & 0 & 1 \end{array}$
156. Then the | Greeks' faith | then their | deceit | appeared |  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 0 & & 2 & & 2 & 2 & 0 & & 0 & 1 & & 0 & 1 \end{array}$
158. Finding | himself | chanced | amid | his foes |  
 $\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} 2 & 0 & & 0 & 1 & & 2 & 0 & & 0 & 1 & & 0 & 2 \end{array}$



Trochee in the second foot is not uncommon, and is sometimes preceded or followed by another trochee, as

- p. 148. Yea, and | either | Atride | would buy | it dear |  
 2 1 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 156. Wherewith | Panthus | scaped from | the Greekish darts |  
 0 1 2 0 2 0 1 0 0 1  
 158. Holding | always | the chief | street of | the town |  
 1 0 1 0 0 1 1 0 0 1  
 160. Of the | virgin | from them | so rescued |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 1 2 0 1  
 161. The gilt | spars and | the beams | then threw | they down |  
 0 1 2 0 0 2 0 1 0 1  
 165. Which repulsed from | the brass | where it | gave dint |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 1 0 1 2  
 173. Till we | came to | the hill | whereas | there stood |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 The old | temple | dedicate to | Ceres |  
 0 1 2 0 2 0 1 0 2 0  
 174. Holding | backward | the steps | where we | had come |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 175. Long to | furrow | large space | of stormy seas |  
 2 0 2 0 1 1 0 2 0 1  
 186. And the | hope of | Iu|lus' seed | mine heir |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 199. From the | bounds of | his kingdom far | exiled |  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 193. Blowing | now from | this quar|ter now | from that |  
 2 0 2 0 2 1 0 2 0 2  
 197. Shall I | wait? or | board | them with | my power |  
 0 1 2 1 1 0 0 1 0 1

[The rhythm is harsher if we take *board* as one syllable forming the first part of a trochee. The fifth foot would then be the trochee *power*.]

Without | taste of | such cares ? | is there | no faith |  
 0 1 2 0 0 1 1 0 2 1

For examples of trochee in the fourth place compare

- p. 144. And where|of no | small part | fell to | my share |  
 0 1 0 1 2 1 1 0 2 1  
 145. In the | dark bulk | they closed | bodies | of men |  
 1 0 1 1 1 0 2 0 0 1  
 147. What news | he brought | what hope | made him | to yield |  
 1 1 0 1 1 1 1 0 0 1  
 Into | his band | young and | near of | his blood |  
 1 0 0 1 2 0 2 0 0 1  
 149. With blood | likewise | ye must | seek your | return |  
 0 2 1 0 0 1 1 0 0 1  
 And that | that cost | each one | dread to | himself |  
 0 1 0 1 1 0 2 0 0 1  
 15. Toward | the tower | our hearts | brent with | desire |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 1

158. Each pal|ace and | sacred porch of | the gods |  
 0 1 0 0 1 0 2 0 0 1

158. And plen|ty of | grisly | pictures | of death  
 0 1 0 0 2 0 2 0 0 1

[Here perhaps the 2nd foot should be taken as an anapaest, *grisly* being pronounced with three syllables, as seemingly in p. 196,

Erebus | the gri|sly | and Cha|os huge | ]  
 1 0 0 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1

p. 159. And the | rich arms | of his | shield did he on  
 0 0 2 1 0 0 2 1 0 1

We went | and gave | many | onsets | that night |  
 0 1 0 1 1 0 1 0 0 1

• To hope | or aught | against | will of | the gods |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 1

From that | high seat | which we | razed and | threw down  
 0 1 1 1 0 1 2 0 0 1

183. Whom our | mother | the earth | tempted | by wrath |  
 1 0 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1

202. And her | dying | she clepes | thus by | her name |  
 0 1 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1

The black | swart gore | wiping | dry with | her hands |  
 0 1 1 1 2 0 2 0 0 1

196. Bent for | to die | calls the | gods to | record |  
 2 0 0 1 2 0 2 0 0 1

And if | there were | any | god that | had care |  
 0 1 0 1 2 0 2 0 0 1

For trochee in fifth place compare

p. 160. The fell | Ajax | and either A|trides |  
 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 0 1 0

163. I saw | Pyrrhus | and ei|ther A|trides |  
 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0

165. Escal|ped from | the slaugh|ter of | Pyrrhus |  
 0 1 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 0

192. Nor cin|ders of | his fa|ther An|chises |  
 0 1 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 0

192. I with | the Greeks | within | the port | Aulide |  
 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 1 1 0

168. Nor bla|med Pa|ris yet | but the | gods' wrat|l |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 1 0 2 1

165. Without | sound hung | vainly | in the | shield's boss  
 0 1 1 1 2 0 0 0 2 1

171. •With sud|den noise | thundered | on the | left hand |  
 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 0 2 1

172. Worship | was done | to Ce|res the | goddess |  
 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0

173. The old | temple | dedi|cate to | Ceres |  
 0 1 2 0 2 0 1 0 2 0

175. Unto | the son | of Ve|nus the | goddess |  
 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0

181. Before | her go | with glad|some I|ulus |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0

184. That now | in Car|thage loi|tereth | reckless |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0  
 187. And that | the feast|ful night | of Ci|theron |  
 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 1 0  
 Doth call | her forth | with no|ise of | dancing |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0  
 192. So hard | to ov|ertreat |? whither | whirls he |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0 2 0  
 196. Stood near | the al|tar, bare | of the | one foot |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 2 1  
 199. What said | I? but | where am | I? what | phrensy |  
 1 1 0 1 1 2 0 1 2 0  
 201. With wai|ling great | and wo|men's shrill | yelling  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0  
 145. By the | divine | science | of Min|erva |  
 0 0 0 1 2 0 0 0 1 0

The rhythm in some of these lines is so harsh, that we might be disposed to think Surrey's pronunciation must have differed from ours, but in almost every case it might be shown that he has elsewhere used the same word with the common accent. It would almost seem as if he were satisfied with the metre, so long as he got ten syllables into the line. I do not think he has any example of truncation, like Chaucer before him or Marlowe afterwards. He admits however trisyllabic feet, as

- p. 146. Or this | an en|gine is | to annoy | our wells |  
 150. The al|tar and sword | quoth he | that I | have scaped |  
 153. O na|tive land | *Nion* | and of | the gods |  
 Four times | it stopt | in the en|try of | our gates |  
 157. As fu|ry gui|ded me and | whereas | *I had heard* |  
 162. Like to | the ad|der with ven|omous her|bes fed |  
 163. There He|cuba | I saw | with a hun|dred mo |  
 167. To revenge | my town | unto | such ru|in wrought |  
 168. Doth Cre|ü|sa live | and As|cä|nius | thy son |  
 199. Infer|nal fu|ries eke |, ye wreak|ers of wrong |  
 174. In the void | porches | Phœnix | Ulys|ses eke |  
 184. A wo|man that wan|dering in | our coasts | hath brought |

Surrey pays as little regard to Dr Guest's rules in regard to the pauses, as in regard to the accent and number of syllables. As often as not, he has no middle pause. Sometimes the end of the line separates closely connected words, as

- p. 174. The rich|es he|re set |, reft from | the brent |  
 Temples | of Troy |

He puts a stop after the ninth syllable, as

- p. 151. His tale | with us | did pur|chase cred|it; some |  
 Trapt by | deceit | ; some, forced by | his tears |

While his most common pause is after the fourth syllable, we sometimes find a pause after the first and second syllables, even though the latter is unaccented, and also after the third, occasionally with very harsh effect, as in

- p. 160. And, by | sound, our | discor|ding voice | they knew |  
 161. The gilt | spars, and | the beams | then throw | they down |  
 165. Without | sound, hung | vainly | in the | shield's boss |  
 168. Anch|ises, thy | father | fordone | with age |  
 196. • The fields | whist, beasts | and fowls | of di|vers hue |  
 197. Shall I | wait? or | board them | with my | power |  
 198. Follow | thee, and | all blithe | obey | thy call |

One of the least pleasant pauses is that in the middle of the third foot, when it is a trochee or spondee, as

- p. 203. Command|ed I | reave; and | thy spir|it unloose |  
           0      1      0      1      2      0      0      1      0      0      1  
 164. An old | laurel | tree, bow|ing there|unto |

Surrey sometimes uses the feminine ending, as in

- p. 196. Him she | requires | of jus|tice to | remem|ber.  
 196. And three | faces | of Di|ana | the vir|gin

He generally imitates Virgil's broken lines. The only other unfinished line I have observed is the third below,

- p. 184. His fair | mother | behight | him not | to us |  
 Such one | to be | , we there|fore twice | him saved |  
 From Greek|ish arms | , but such | a one |  
 As might, &c.

where probably we should insert *to be* before *such*.

Occasionally we meet with Alexandrines, as

- p. 196. Her cares | redoub|le; love | doth rise | and rage | again |  
 200. But fall | before | his time | ungraved | , amid | the sands |

Not to confine myself to specimens of eccentricity, I add the following passage as a favourable example of his ordinary metre.

- p. 201. Sweet spoils | , whiles God | and des|tinies | it would, |  
 Receive | this sprite | , and rid | me of | these cares: |  
 I lived | and ran | the course | fortune | did grant; |

And un|der earth | my great | ghost now | shall wend : |  
 A good|ly town | I built | and saw | my walls ; |  
 Happy |, alas |, too hap|py, if | these coasts |  
 The Troy|an ships | had nev|er touch|ed aye.

Before going on to Marlowe, it may be worth while to give Gascoigne's rule of metre contained in his *Instruction concerning the making of verse in English*, which was first published in 1575. There he tells us (p. 36, Arber) that 'there are certain pauses or rests in a verse, which may be called Caesures, whereof I should be loth to stand long, since it is at the discretion of the writer, and they have been first devised, as should seem, by the musicians; but yet thus much I will adventure to write that, in mine opinion, in a verse of eight syllables the pause will stand best in the midst, in a verse of ten it will be best placed at the end of the first four syllables....In Rhithm Royall (which he afterwards explains to be a seven-line rhyming stanza, each line containing ten syllables) it is at the writer's discretion, and forceth not where the pause be until the end of the line.' He further says (p. 33) that 'nowadays in English rimes we use none other order but a foot of two syllables, whereof the first is depressed or made short, and the second elevate or made long,' whereas in former poets, such as Chaucer, there was much greater liberty in regard to the number of syllables. In observing the rule of alternating accented and unaccented syllables, we are to remember to keep "the natural and usual sound of the word."

The rhythm of Marlowe (d. 1593) is very different from that of Surrey. It is much more regular in accentuation, but, if the text is correct, it occasionally admits of initial truncation, leaving only nine syllables in the line. I have noted the following instances: the pages are Dyce's ed. 1850.

- Vol. i. p. 48. Bar|barous | and bloo|dy Tam|burlaine |  
 Treach|erous | and false | Therid|amas |  
 49. Blood|y and | insa|tiate Tam|burlaine |  
 51. Long | live Tam|burlaine | and reign | in A|sia  
 145. Arm | dread sov|ereign and | my no|ble lords |  
 164. Now | my boys | what think | you of | a wound |  
 146. Trai|tors vill|lains dam|ned Chris|tians |

and almost in the same words in pp. 178, 203.

- Villain traitor dam|ned fugitive |  
 Villains cow|ards traitors to | our state |  
 181. Bro|ther ho | what giv|en so much | to sleep |  
 189. Con|quer sack | and ut|terly | consume |  
 198. Save | your ho|nours 'twere | but time | indeed |  
 199. Let | us not | be id|le then | my lord |  
 63. Kings | of Fez | Moroc|co and | Argier |  
 83. Cap|oline | hast thou | survey|ed | our powers |  
 98. What | is beau|ty, saith | my suf|ferings then |  
 18. Duke | of Afr|ica and | Alba|nia |

I am doubtful about the last, because Marlowe is so capricious in his pronunciation of proper names. If Africa were pronounced Africa or Affarica, the line would be regular. I find in three several passages Euphrātes, viz.<sup>1</sup>:

- p. 110. As vast | a deep | as Euph|rates | or Nile |  
 157. That touch | the end | of fam|ous Euph|rates |  
 212. Of Euph|rates | and Tig|ris swift|ly run |

So in pp. 139, 71, we find Gibrālter—

- We kept | the nar|row strait | of Gibr|alter |  
 And thence | unto | the straits | of Gib|ralter |

In the latter passage some editions spell it Jubaltar. In 85 we have Bajāzeth long—

- And now | Baja|zeth hast | thou an|y stom|ach

There are three other passages in which Affarica would set the rhythm right—

- p. 209. A cit|adel | that all | Affa|rica |  
 14. Create | him pro|rex of | Affa|rica |  
 20. To safe | conduct | us through | Affa|rica |

It should be mentioned, however, that in the last two lines the 8vo. of 1592 has a different reading, inserting in one *all*, in the other changing *through* into *thorough*.

<sup>1</sup> So in Greene's *Friar Bacon*, p. 214 (Dyce)—

Circled | with Gil|hon and | first Euph|rātes |

Shakspeare's *Antony and Cleopatra*, I. 2. 105—

Extend|ed A|sia | from Euph|rātes |

The monosyllabic foot is more frequent in *Tamburlaine* than in Marlowe's other plays, but I think examples may be found in all. The following are taken from *Edward II.*—

Vol. II. p. 177. No | but we'll | lift Gav|eston | from hence |

(This would be regular if we read 'we will.')

p. 219. Lan|caster | why talk'st | thou to | the slave |

252. Mor|timer | who talks | of Mor|timer |

(Here it would be easy to prefix an 'of.')

p. 273. Where|fore stay | we? On | sirs to | the coast |

277. Mor|timer | I did | he is | our king |

(Here 'aye' might naturally precede.)

In *Faustus* we find

p. 8. Jer|ome's bi|ble, Faus|tus ; view | it well |

19. Now | Faustus | what wouldst | thou have | me do |

36. Faus|tus thou | art damn'd | ; then swords | and knives |

It is doubtful, however, how far we can trust our text of Marlowe, as the metre frequently halts in other feet besides the first, e.g. in *Edward II.*

p. 174. 'Tis true, the bishop is in the Tower.

180. Lay hands on that traitor Mortimer.

(where probably we should read *upon*).

p. 188. Plead for him that will, I am resolved

(where we should probably insert *he* before *that*).

p. 193. Diablo, what passions call you these?

(where perhaps we should read *diavolo*).

p. 207. 'Twas in your wars ; you should ransom him.

(perhaps *and* should be inserted before *you*).

p. 211. Pardon me sweet ; I forgot myself.

(perhaps *I had forgot* or *did forget*).

p. 227. And Spenser spare them not, lay it on.

(we might insert *but* before *lay*).

p. 255. Well that shall be, shall be : part we must.

(probably *that* should be doubled).

p. 257. Should drink his blood, mounts up to the air.

(perhaps we should read *into* for *to*).

p. 269. Sister, Edward is my charge; redeem him.

(which would make better sense if we read thus,

Sister, Edward's my charge; let me redeem him.)

p. 281. To murder you, my most gracious Lord.

(where perhaps *may* should be inserted before *my*).

Sometimes a missing syllable may be accounted for by the presence of the letter *r* as in

p. 172. Eärl | of Corn|wall king | and lord | of Man |

231. Eärl | of Glocester and | Lord Cham|berlain |

287. Because | I think | scörn | to be | accused |

(though it would be easy to insert *so* before *accused*)

p. 168. Were swó|fn to | your un|cle at | his death |

Here the *r* precedes a consonant, but the same effect is produced where it follows a long vowel, as in *fire*, *sure*, *assure*, or a consonant, as in *hundred*, *entrails*, *nostril*, *monstrous*, e.g.

As mons|trous | as Gor|gon prince | of hell |

So we find in *Edward II.* Mowbray, Pembroke, gentry, frustrate, secret, thrust. The letter *l* sometimes has the same effect, as

I. 47. Resolve | I hope | we are | resem|bled | II. 173, chaplain,  
251, deeply.

We also have priëst, heär, despäir, and even Edüard twice, pp. 234, 269.

Feminine rhythm is more frequent in Marlowe than in Surrey. We even find two superfluous syllables at the end of the line, unless we are to reckon as Alexandrines verses like the following from vol. II. (Dyce, ed. 1850.)

p. 13. Faustus | these books | thy wit | and our | expe|rience

12. Yet not | your words | only | but mine | own fan|tasy

21. What is | great Meph|istophilis | so pas|ionate

28. And Faus|tus hath | bequeathed | his soul | to Lu|cifer

Anapæsts are common in any part of the line, e.g.

p. 7. Bid eon|omy | farewell | and Ga|llen come |

9. Are but | obeyed | in their sev|eral prov|inces |

28. Already Faus|tus hath haz|arded that | for me |

32. Speak Faus|tus do | you deliv|er this | as your deed |

75. Sweet Hellen make | me immor|tal with | a kiss |

289. And with | the rest | accom|pany him | to his grave |



And we occasionally meet with dactyls, as

- p. 9. Shall be | at my | command | *emperors* | and kings |  
 13. *Shadowing* | more beauty in | their airy brows |  
 233. Edward | with fire | and sword | *follows at* | thy heels |

Trochees are common in the first foot, and in the third and fourth after a stop.

- p. 245. Gallop | apace | bright Phœ|bus through | the sky |  
 231. Let them | not un|reveng'd | murder | your friends |

Examples such as the following are much rarer in Marlowe than in Surrey:

- p. 199. I am | none of | these com|mon ped|ants I |  
 269. Brother | Edmund | strive not | we are | his friends |  
 255. And hags | howl for | my death | at Cha|ron's shore |  
 270. My lord | be not | pensive | we are | your friends |  
 193. Repealed | : the news | is too | sweet to | be true |  
 36. Why should | I die | then or | basely | despair |  
 269. Hence will | I haste | to Kill|lingworth | castle |  
 51. Caro|lus the | fifth at | whose palace now |

(The last line is not worse than several in Surrey, but I think it is impossible in Marlowe. I suspect that an epithet such as *high* has been lost before *palace*, making the 1st foot a dactyl.)

As to the pauses, most lines have only the final pause. An internal pause is most commonly found after the fourth or sixth syllable, but it is also found after the second, as

- p. 261. Take it. What, are you mov'd? pity you me

and the third, as

- p. 261. Receive it? no, these innocent hands of mine  
 239. Noble minds contemn  
 Despa|ir. Will | your grace | with me | to Hain|ault?  
 270. Therefore, come; dalliance dangereth our lives  
 278. Art thou king? must I die at thy command?

The last two verses are rendered harsher by the accent falling

on the first syllable of the second foot. We also find the same effect in the third foot, as

p. 198. A vel|vet-cap'd | cloak, faced | before | with serge |  
Or ma|king low | legs to | a nob|leman |

199. And being | like pins' | heads, blame | me for | the bus|ness

But, making all allowance for occasional harshness, there can be no question of the great superiority of Marlowe to Surrey in point of rhythm. Such a passage as the following fully justifies Ben Jonson's praise of 'Marlowe's mighty line,'

p. 257. The griefs of private men are soon allay'd;  
But not of kings. The forest deer, being struck,  
Runs to an herb that closeth up the wounds:  
But when the imperial lion's flesh is gor'd,  
He rends and tears it with his wrathful paw,  
And, highly scorning that the lowly earth  
Should drink his blood, mounts up *into* the air.

## CHAPTER X.

### SHAKESPEARE'S BLANK VERSE.

#### MACBETH.

I PROCEED now to the examination of Shakespeare's rhythm as seen in the play of *Macbeth*<sup>1</sup>, limiting myself to the two kinds of variation before mentioned, viz. that through the number of syllables and that through the number or position of accents. Variation in the number of syllables may be either by way of defect (*A.*), or of excess (*B.*).

*A.*—A line which is defective may be plainly fragmentary, wanting either the beginning or the end (*I.*), or it may be a skeleton line wanting some of its internal syllables (*II.*). The latter I shall call specially 'defective,' the former 'fragmentary.'

*I.* 1.—Of fragmentary lines, which are still rhythmical, the majority are brief sentences occurring in rapid dialogue. These frequently combine to make up regular lines, as

*Len.* Good-morrow, noble sir.    *Mac.* Good-morrow both.

But they are also irregularly combined, the metre being obscured by the division of parts, and in this way they give rise to Alexandrines which are otherwise rare in Shakespeare (*a*), and to what Dr Abbott has called 'amphibious sections'—a more business-like name might be 'common sections'—where an intermediate sentence does double work, supplying the close

<sup>1</sup> It was in lecturing on this play that my attention was first drawn to what appeared to me to be defects in the existing treatises on English metre. I have used it here to illustrate

the different ways in which Shakespeare gives variety to the regular iambic line, not with any view of tracing the historical development of his own metre.

of a preceding fragmentary line, and also the commencement of a following fragmentary line (b), e.g.

iv. 3. 219. *Macd.* At one | fell swoop |. *Malc.* Dispute | it like | a man |.  
[Dispute | it like | a man |.] *Macd.* I shall | do so |.

There are many examples in *Macbeth* both of the common section and of Alexandrines formed by the union of two fragmentary lines. Examples of the latter will be given further on.

I. 2.—Fragmentary lines are also found at the beginning, middle, and end of longer speeches.

(a) Those at the beginning are frequently short introductory phrases, as v. 5. 30, Gracious my lord; III. 2. 26, Come on; II. 3. 86, What's the business (which becomes rhythmical if we either read 'what is' for 'what's' or pronounce 'business' as a trisyllable, of which Walker gives examples). Most commonly such a broken line is the second half of a preceding broken line; as Lady Macbeth's "What beast was't then" follows on Macbeth's "Who dares do more is none." So III. 4. 99, "What man dare I dare," seems to take up the fragmentary line which ends Macbeth's previous speech "which thou dost glare with," no notice being taken of Lady Macbeth's intermediate address to the guests. Sometimes it becomes metrical by treating a portion of a preceding regular line as a common section, e.g.

II. 4. 33. *Macd.* To be | invest|ed. *Ross.* Where | is Dun|can's bo|dy?  
[Where's Dun|can's bo|dy] *Macd.* Car|ried to Colme|kill.  
III. 2. 12. *L. Mac.* Should be | without | regard |; what's done | is done |.  
[What's done | is done.] *Macb.* We've scotched | the snake | not killed | it.  
v. 8. 23. And break | it to | our hope | ! I'll not | fight with | thee  
[I will | not fight | with thee.] *Macd.* Then yield | thee, cow|ard.  
v. 3. 34. *Macb.* Give me | my ar|mour. *Sey.* 'Tis | not need|ed yet |.  
[It is | not need|ed yet.] *Macb.* I'll put | it on |.

It will be noticed that in three of these examples the common section is of greater rhythmical importance in one of the two lines, owing either to feminine rhythm or to contraction, *I'll* for *I will*, *'tis* for *it is*. Some may perhaps doubt the applicability of the principle in these cases, or even deny its use altogether; but whoever will go through any play, noting every fragmentary line, as I have done in *Macbeth*, will, I think, be surprised to

find the very small residuum of lines which remain unmetrical if treated on this method. Whether Shakespeare consciously intended it is another matter. I believe he simply wanted harmonious lines, and the common section contributed to this result without his thinking about it.

(b) Speeches are often closed by a fragmentary line. This is sometimes a short final phrase, as I. 5. 74, Leave all the rest to me; I. 6. 31, By your leave, hostess; IV. 1. 156, Come, bring me where they are; III. 3. 56, So, prithee, go with me. It seems to be especially used in the absence of the rhyming couplet as the natural close of the scene or of an important speech, e.g. I. 4. 53, It is a peerless kinsman; v. 4. 21, Towards which advance the war; III. 4. 144, We are yet but young indeed; II. 3. 95, And say it is not so; III. 2. 26, Can touch him further; v. 2. 31, Make we our march towards Birnam; v. 7. 23, And more I beg not. Sometimes there is a special impressiveness in the words thus isolated, e.g. I. 4. 14, An absolute trust; v. 5. 28, Signifying nothing; II. 2. 63, Making the green one red. Where the broken final line does not conclude the scene, it is usually taken up and completed by a broken initial line, e.g.

I. 5. 55. To cry | hold, hold ! || Great Glamis, wor|thy Caw|dor.

or by a portion of a complete initial line used as a common section, as III. 4. 68,

*Lady Mac.* You look | but on | a stool | . *Macb.* [Prithee | see there | ]  
Prithee | see there | Behold | look, lo | I pray | you.

(c) Far less common are fragmentary lines in the middle of speeches, and those which occur may often be resolved into cases of either (a) or (b); what is printed as a single speech consisting really of several speeches uttered continuously by the same person, e.g. I. 5. 62, Lady Macbeth ends one topic with the broken line "Shall sun that morrow see," and goes on, possibly after a pause, to appeal more directly to her husband, "Your face, my thane," which, it is to be observed, itself forms a common section. So I. 1. 41, "I cannot tell" ends the sergeant's description of the battle, and in the following line he asks for help for his own wounds. III. 4. 4, "And play the humble host" may be the end of an address to one guest, Macbeth turning

to another in the next line. III. 4. 99, "What man dare I dare", is addressed to Lady Macbeth, and followed by "Approach thou like," etc. addressed to the Ghost. II. 1. 41, "As this which now I draw" is followed by a pause for drawing the sword, and watching the imaginary dagger. III. 2. 51, "Makes wing to the rooky wood" may suggest a pause for watching the coming on of night, while the following lines give the general reflection, "Good things of day," etc.

Short phrases or titles are sometimes given in broken lines in the middle of speeches, e.g. III. 1. 40, "Farewell," and a few lines below we should read with Abbott

Sirrah,  
A word with you: attend those men our pleasure?

So in III. 2. 15, it seems better to print

But let  
The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer,

expressive of a pause before the imprecation, rather than as an Alexandrine. Similarly, in I. 1. 37, we should read (with the Cambridge edition, not the Clarendon) "so they" as fragmentary, and not join it to either line. The pause gives more force to the following line "doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe." Some of the broken lines in *Macbeth* may be the result of corruption of the text, e.g. III. 2. 32, "Unsafe the while that we," which is also suspicious from the harsh construction; and I. 2. 20, "Till he faced the slave." In other places wrong printing has given the appearance of broken lines, e.g. II. 3. 120 (reading 'let us away' for 'let's away')

Let us | away | our tears | are not | yet brewed |

and IV. 3. 28, which should be read

Without | leave taking? I | pray you | let not |  
My jea|lousies | be your | disho|nours, but |  
Mine own | safeties | . You may | be right|ly just | .

(For the double trochee in the last line see p. 38.)

II.—We go on to the consideration of lines which are not fragmentary, mere heads or tails, but defective in their internal structure. Such defectiveness is sometimes only apparent,

arising from difference of pronunciation (1), or it may be real, but supplied by a pause (2), or by a compensative lengthening of some long syllable (3).

(1).—The most common case of what we pronounce as a monosyllable being treated as a disyllable, is where the letter *r* occurs either following a long vowel (*a*), as in I. 2. 45,

Who comes | héte | ? The wor|thy thane | of Ross |

unless (which I should prefer) we adopt Pope's reading and prefix a 'but' to the beginning of the line. 'But' is wanted, and *who* and *here* would then get their right emphasis. Moreover, the phrase 'but who comes here' is common in Shakespeare. Abbott quotes four examples of it in p. 414.

- I. 6. 6. Smells woo|ingly | héte | : no jut | ty freeze | .
- II. 3. 128. What should | .be spo|ken he|re, where | our fate | .
- I. 6. 30. And shall | conti|nue ô|ür gra|ces towards | him.
- II. 1. 20. I dreamt | last night | of the | three we|ird sis|ters.
- IV. 3. 111. Died ev|ery day | she lived | Fâre | thee well | .

[so better than by dividing 'liv|ed'].]

Also where *r* follows a consonant (*b*), as ent(e)rance I. 5. 40, rememb(e)rance III. 2. 30, monst(e)rous III. 6. 8, child(e)ren IV. 3. 172; and even where it precedes a consonant, as in III. 1. 102,

Not in | the wor|(e)st rank | of man|hood say | it.

Examples will be found in Walker's *Versification*, p. 32, and in Abbott. So Burns (quoted by Guest, vol. i. p. 57) has—

“Ye'll try | the wâ|ld soon | my lad | .  
“On ev|ry blade | the peâ|t|is hung | .”

Other examples of words pronounced with more syllables than we should now give to them are *sergeânt* I. 1. 3, *cap(i)tains* I. 1. 34, *prayers* III. 6. 49. Mr Wagner, in his edition, goes too far, when he tells us, on I. 2. 5,

'Gainst my | captiv|ity. | Hail | brave friend |

“*brave* zu sprechen wie *bra-ave*.” And Dr Abbott is almost as daring in making 'hail' a disyllable (*S.G.* § 484).

(2) and (3).—It will be best to consider together all the cases of really defective lines, as they are usually capable of

being explained either on the principle of the pause or of the lengthened syllable. The former explanation is the one which commends itself the most to myself. In many cases indeed I should treat the defective line as consisting of a final and initial fragmentary line. Thus in *I. 2. 5*, " 'gainst my captivity" is the end of the speech to the king; "hail, brave friend," is the commencement of the speech to the sergeant; and the pause between the two takes the place of the omitted syllable. In *I. 4. 14*, "an absolute trust" ends Duncan's address to Malcolm; "O worthiest cousin" begins the address to Macbeth, the pause, occasioned by the entrance of the latter, occupying the place of two syllables. In *I. 5. 41*, "under my battlements" closes Lady Macbeth's reflections on the hoarse messenger, and then, after a pause, begins the invocation of the powers of evil, "come, you spirits." In *II. 3. 83*, "the great doom's image. Malcolm! Banquo!" we have a final fragmentary line followed by a pause and an extra-metrical exclamation. The pause will also sufficiently explain *I. 4. 35*, "In drops of sorrow. Sons, kinsmen, thanes;" *II. 1. 19*, "which else should free have wrought. *Banq.* All's well" (this line, which consists properly of two fragments, is reduced to regularity by Dr Abbott, who reads 'all is,' and disyllabizes 'wrought'); *II. 4. 29*, "Thine own life's means! Then 'tis most like" (here too Dr Abbott obtains a regular line by reading 'it is' and disyllabizing 'means'); *I. 2. 7*, "As thou didst leave it. Doubtful it stood" (but I should prefer here to read 'doubtfully'); *IV. 3. 218*, "did you say all? O hell-kite! all?" (though, if it were desired, the cry expressed by the conventional symbol *O* might fill the space of three syllables), and *v. 7. 22*, "seems bruited. Let me find him fortune," though I confess I should prefer to read with Steevens, 'let me but find him fortune,' not only as more rhythmical, but as more expressive. In the famous line—

*I. 7. 28.* And falls | on the o|ther. | How now | what news | ?

the loss of a syllable is quite accounted for by the pause, but I should prefer to insert 'side.' It seems to me more probable that we have here a piece of carelessness on the part of the printer, of which there is such abundant evidence throughout,



rather than that Shakespeare was guilty of what I should be disposed to call the affectation of expressing surprise by the cutting short of one little word. Other passages in which the pause is perhaps a less satisfactory expedient are the following: II. 1. 51, "The curtained sleep: witchcraft celebrates," where the pause after 'sleep' is scarcely sufficient to justify the omission of a syllable. Dr Abbott would make 'sleep' a disyllable, supporting this by Richard III., v. 3. 130, which he divides thus—

Doth com|fort thee in | thy sle|ep: live | and flou|rish.

[The true scanning has been given in a former chapter.] In the line before us I should prefer to read 'sleeper' as more suited to the definite article. In IV. 1. 122, "Horrible sight! Now I see 'tis true," there is a decided pause, but the rhythm is so harsh that I am inclined to think that an exclamation must have dropped out of the text. Such a cry would be very natural on catching sight of Banquo's ghost. Dr Abbott disyllabizes 'sight.' In IV. 3. 44, "Of goodly thousands: but, for all this," there is a pause both before and after 'but'; not enough, however, to account for the rhythm. Dr Abbott disyllabizes 'but.' I should be rather disposed, if the line is correct, to give a disyllabic weight to 'all' with its long vowel and final liquid.

*B.*—Where there is excess in the number of syllables, the extra syllables may be either outside the feet, producing what is called the feminine ending (*I.*), or they may be included in the feet (*II.*).

*I.*—The first kind of superfluous syllable is frequently found at the end of the line, and its presence or absence has been used as a test for determining the genuineness or the age of the Shakespearian Plays, the prevalent taste in the end of Elizabeth's reign inclining more and more to a broken rhythm, just as we find in Euripides a growing tendency to the use of trisyllabic feet. Sometimes we find two such unaccented syllables, which generally admit of being slurred, as in 'conference.' Examples will be given further on under the head of apparent Alexandrines. As I am not now treating of specialities of rhythm, but merely illustrating the general manner of its variation, I shall say:

nothing more of this (a), but go on to the rarer use of the superfluous syllable at the close of the second or third foot (b). This is acknowledged by Dr Guest and Dr Abbott, but Mr Ellis would treat all such cases under the head of trisyllabic feet. I observe in the passage from M. Gaston Paris, printed p. 46, that two of the four types of the old French decasyllabic metre are what he calls feminine at the hemistich. I make twenty-five lines in *Macbeth* with the superfluous syllable after the second foot, and thirty-two with it after the third foot. In almost all there is a full stop after the superfluous syllable, which makes it more difficult to join it with what follows, so as to form a trisyllabic foot. In several instances, however, it would be possible to get rid of the superfluous syllable on the principle of slurring, of which I shall shortly speak. Thus several end in *r* and *s*, which have a tendency to obscure the sound of a preceding vowel, e.g.

- I. 7. 26. Of his | own chamb'r | and used | their ve|ry dag|gers.  
 II. 3. 138. Of trea|s'nous mal'ce |. And so | do I |. So all |.

Sometimes we find the double feminine ending, both after the second and after the last foot, e.g.

- I. 3. 43. That man | may ques|tion | You seem | to un|derstand | me.  
 I. 7. 10. To plague | the inven|tor | This ev|en-hand|ed just|ice.

Superfluous after second foot:

- I. 3. 72. But how | of Caw|dor | ? The thane | of Caw|dor lives |  
 I. 3. 150. With things | forgot|ten |. Kind gen|tlemen | your pains |  
 I. 4. 42. On all | deserv|ers |. From hence | to In|verness |  
 II. 2. 53. Give me | the dag|gers | : the sleep|ing and | the dead |  
 II. 2. 66. At the | south en|try | : retire | we to | our cham|ber.

[Though here we might divide | at the south | entry |, and there is a further explanation in the repeated *re*.]

- II. 3. 109. Upon | their pil|lows | : they stared | and were | distrac|ted.  
 II. 3. 147. The near|er blood|y |. This mur|d'rous shaft | that's shot |.  
 III. 1. 26. 'Twixt this | and sup|per |. Go not | my horse | the bet|ter.  
 III. 1. 35. Craving | us joint|ly |. Hie you | to horse |, adieu |.  
 III. 1. 80. In-our | last conf|erence |, passed in | proba|tion with | you?  
 III. 1. 84. Say thus | did Ban|quo |. You made | it known | to us |.  
 III. 1. 128. Your spirits | shine through | you |. Within | this hour |  
                   at most |.

- iv. 2. 17. The fits | of the sea|son |, I dare | not speak | much fur|ther.  
 iv. 2. 35. Why should | I, mo|ther |. Poor birds | they are | not set |  
 for.  
 III. 2. 19. That shake | us night|ly |. Better | be with | the dead |.  
 iv. 3. 220. Convert | to an|ger |. Blunt not | the heart | enrage | it.  
 III. 2. 22. In rest|less ecs|t'ay |. Duncan | is in | his grave |.  
 III. 4. 36. 'Tis given | with wel|come |. To feed | were best | at home |.  
 III. 4. 87. To those | that know | me |. Come love | and health | to  
 all |.  
 III. 4. 103. Shall ne|ver trem|ble |; or be | alive | again |.  
 v. 6. 4. Lead our | first bat|tle |. Worthy | Macduff | and we |.

Superfluous after third foot:

- v. 3. 7. Shall e'er | have power | upon | thee |. Then fly ' false  
 thanes  
 v. 3. 4. Was he | not born | of wom|an |? The sprites | that know |.  
 v. 4. 3. What wood | is this | before | us |? The wood | of Bir|nam.  
 v. 2. 11. Protest | their first | of man|hood |. What does | the ty|rant?  
 v. 1. 65. Do breed | unnat|ural trou|bles |. Infect|ed minds |.  
 iv. 3. 223. That were | most pre|cious to | me |. Did heaven | look on |  
 iv. 3. 156. The heal|ing ben|edict|ion |. With this | strange vir|tue.  
 iv. 3. 177. Each mi|nute teems | a new | one |. How does | my wife |?  
 iv. 3. 117. To thy | good truth | and hon|our |. Devilish | Macbeth |.  
 iv. 3. 33. For good|ness dare | not check | thee |. Wear thou | thy  
 wrongs |.  
 iv. 2. 77. Account|ed dang'rous fol|ly |; why then | alas |.  
 iv. 2. 14. So runs | against | all rea|son |. My dear|est coz |.  
 III. 6. 43. That clogs | me with | this ans|wer |. And that | well might |.  
 III. 6. 44. Advise | him to | a cau|tion |, to hold | what dis|tance.  
 III. 4. 110. With most | admired | disorder |. Can such | things be |.  
 III. 4. 112. Without | our spe|cial won|der |? You make | me strange |.  
 III. 4. 84. Your no|ble friends | do lack | you |. I do | forget |.  
 III. 4. 60. That might | appal | the de|vil |. O prop|er stuff |.  
 III. 1. 126. For sun|dry weight|y rea|sons |. We shall | my lord |.  
 III. 1. 107. Which in | his death | were per|fect |. I'm one | my liege |  
 III. 1. 57. Mark An|tony was | by Cae|sar |. He chid | the sis|ters.  
 I. 3. 113. With hid|den help | and van|tage |, or that | with both |.  
 I. 4. 56. It is | a ban|quet to | me |. Let's af|ter him |.  
 I. 6. 3. Unto | our gen|tle sens|es |. This guest | of sum|mer.  
 II. 1. 26. It shall | make hon|our for | you |. So I | lose no|ise |.  
 II. 2. 52. Look on't | again | I dare | not |. Infirm | of pur|pose.  
 II. 2. 54. That fears | a pain|ted dev|il |. If he | do bleed |.  
 II. 2. 74. Wake Dun|can with | thy knock|ing |. I would | thou  
 couldst |.  
 III. 6. 2. Which can | inter|pret fur|ther |. Only | I say |.

II. 2. 23. That they | did wake | each o|ther | . I stood | and heard |  
them.

v. 8. 6. With blood | of thine | alrea|dy | . I have | no words | .

v. 8. 27. Here may | you see | the ty|rant | . I will | not yield | .

II.—Extra syllables within the feet may either disappear through elision (a) or slurring (b), or they may be distinctly perceptible and form trisyllabic feet (c), or finally they may form an extra foot, giving rise to an Alexandrine (d).

(a) As regards the mark of elision, there seems to have been no principle in the First Folio, and not much in later editions. I have by me a complete collation of the elisions in the Folio and in the Clarendon edition, and in several cases syllables essential to the metre are cut out, e.g. 'let's away' in

II. 3. 129. Let us | away | our tears | are not | yet brewed | .

In others, syllables are unelided, the absence of which would certainly improve the rhythm, e.g. I should prefer '*gan*' and '*would*', to '*began*' and '*I would*' in the following

I. 2. 53. The thane | of Caw|dor '*gan* | a dis|mal con|flict.

II. 2. 73. Wake Dun|can with | thy knoc|king. '*Would* | thou couldst | .

So I should prefer *thou'rt* and *I'm* to *thou art* and *I am* in

I. 4. 16. Was heav|y on | me. Thou'rt | so far | before | .

III. 1. 168. Which in | his death | were perf|ect | . I'm one | my liege | .

Perhaps the sign of elision should only be used where there is a complete disappearance of the syllable. There are three degrees of evanescence, (1) where the syllable is distinctly pronounced, but is metrically superfluous (as in a trisyllabic foot), (2) where it is slurred, blending more or less with a preceding or succeeding sound, (3) where it is entirely inaudible. It will depend very much on the taste of the individual reader what view he will take of any particular syllable, and I doubt whether it is possible to arrive at any certainty with regard to the usage in Shakespeare's time. Perhaps as *the* is constantly printed as *th* in the Elizabethan writers, even in prose and before consonants, we may assume that its vowel was entirely lost before vowels, where we should make a glide or slur it.

The commonest elisions in the First Folio are 'd for *ed* in the preterite and past participle, even where the present ends with *e*, as 'fac'd,' 'carv'd': *th* for *the*, as 'to th' chops,' 'o' th' milk,' 'th' utterance.' Not unfrequently this elision is wrongly given where the syllable is required for the metre: e.g. III. 4. 101,

The armed | rhino|ceros or | the Hyr|can tilger.

is better than 'th' Hyrcan' of the Folio. And there can be no doubt that 'th' expedition' and 'th' Tiger' are wrong in

II. 3. 92. The ex|pedi|tion of | my vi|olent love | .

I. 3. 7. Her hus|band's to | Alep|po gone | master | o' the Tilger.

Equally common with these is the elision of 's for *is*. 'When the battle's lost and won.'

's also stands for *us*, 'betray's' in I. 8. 125 (unnecessarily, though the Clarendon adopts it).

Win us | with hon|est trif|les to | betray | us.

So in 'let's' (several times), 'upon's' (unnecessarily, though adopted by Clarendon) in

III. 1. 36. Ay, my | good lord | : our time | does call | upon | us.

And v. 6. 5.

's for *his*. II. 2. 22, 'in's sleep.' II. 3. 99, 'make's love known.'

Another very common elision is *st* for *est*, e.g. *cam'st*, *anticipat'st*, *got'st*, *kind'st*, *stern'st*, *near'st*, *secret'st*, *dear'st*.

'll for *will*. *I'll* (always *ile* in the Folio), *we'll*, *you'll*.

'ld for *would*; *thou'ldst*, *we'ld*, *I'ld*, *you'ld*.

'lt for *wilt*, *thou'lt*.

'dst for *hadst* 'thou'dst rather hear it.'

'rt for *art*, 'thou'rt mad.'

't for *it*, prefixed, 'twas, 'twere, 'tis, 'twould.

suffixed, *is't*, *was't*, *were't*, *may't*, *please't*, *done't*, *be't*,

*bear't*, *goes't*, *take't*, *pull't*, *deny't*, *on't*, *in't*,

*for't*, *to't*, *before't*, *under't*, *if't*, *an't*. This is

adopted by Clarendon.

*t'* for *to*, *t'hold* III. 6. 44, *t'appease* IV. 3. 18. Not adopted by Clarendon.

*o'er* for *over*, *o'erleap*, *o'erbear*, *o'erfraught*.

*ne'er*, for *never*.

*o'* for *of*, *o' th'*, *o' that*, adopted by Clarendon.

*i'* for *in*, *i' faith* once, *i' th'* many times, adopted by Clarendon.

*'em* for *them* several times, adopted by Clarendon.

Surd vowel omitted in *murth'ring* I. 5. 47, *temp'rate* II. 3. 90, *mock'ry* III. 4. 106, *vap'rous* III. 5. 24, *med'cine* IV. 3. 210, and V. 2, *whisp'rings* V. 1, not adopted by Clarendon; of course, if employed at all, it ought to be used in very many more instances.

Loss of initial short syllable: *'gainst* for *against*, *'bove* for *above*, *'twixt* for *betwixt*, *'gin* for *begin*, adopted by Clarendon, which also reads *'scape*, *'cause*, for *escape*, *because*, where the Folio gave the abbreviation without mark of elision.

The Clarendon edition also gives the apostrophe after *highness'*, used for the genitive, where there is none in the Folio.

Two special words, *god'ild*, *sev'night*, complete the list of elisions contained in the Folio.

It has already been seen that some of these are incorrect. The other errors which I have noticed are as follows: I. 3. 18, "I'll drain him dry as hay," corrected in C.

II. 3. 102, Fol. and C.

What is | amiss | ? You are | and do | not know 't | .

the elision of *it* is quite unnecessary.

III. 1. 102. Not in | the wor|st rank | of man|hood say | it.

F. and C. read *say't*, *i'*, and F. gives *th'*.

III. 4. 89. I drink | to the gen|eral joy | of the | whole ta|ble.

F. gives *th'* for *the* and *o'* for *of*; C. only the latter.

IV. 3. 180. Be not | a nig|gard of | your speech. | : how goes | it ?

F. and C. unnecessarily elide *it*.

I will lastly give a list of passages in which a necessary elision is unmarked.

It is singular that with the exception of *thou'dst* for *thou hadst*, F. never contracts *have*. Otherwise *I've*, *we've*, *they've*,

*I'd, he's*, would be naturally written in the following lines, among others, where F. and C. both give the words at full length :

- I. 4. 20. Might have | been mine | : only | I've left | to say | .  
 I. 4. 18. To o|vertake | thee : would | thou'dst less | deserved | .  
 v. 2. 73. We've willing dames | enough | , there can|not be | .  
 II. 1. 21. To you | they've showed | some truth | . I think | not of |  
           them.  
 II. 2. 6. Do mock | their charge | with snores | . I've drugged | their  
           pos|sets.  
 III. 4. 20. Then comes | my fit | again | I'd else | been per|fect.

So in the following lines we should read, instead of *I am, thou art, we would*,

- III. 1. 108. Which in | his death | were per|fect | . I'm one | my liege | .  
 I. 3. 133. Commenc|ing in | a truth | . I'm thane | of Caw|dor.  
 I. 4. 16. Was hea|vy on | me, thou 'rt | so far | before | .  
 II. 1. 23. Wo|ld spend | it in | some words | upon | that bus|iness.  
 II. 4. 17. Contend|ing 'gainst | obe|dience as | they 'ld make | .  
 I. 5. 21. The ill|ness should | attend | it, what | thou'dst high|ly.

So '*to his home*,' '*what is*' '*Macduff is*,' are better contracted in

- I. 6. 24. To's home | before | us. Fair | and no|ble hos|tess.  
 II. 3. 77. Is left | this vault | to brag | of. What's | amiss | .  
 III. 6. 29. 'Takes from | his high | respect | . Thither Mac|duff's gone | .

(b) Dr Abbott makes great use of the principle of slurring, and is proportionately chary of admitting trisyllabic feet. As a rule I prefer the latter explanation, while allowing the possibility of the former explanation in the cases which follow. The commonest case is where the roll of an *r* obscures a neighbouring vowel. Thus we may slur the following vowel in

- III. 4. 107. The ba|by of | a girl | hence hor|rible shad|ow.  
 v. 3. 44. Cleanse the | stuffed bo|som of | that per|lous stuff |

and so with *ceremony, warranted, nourisher, tyranny, verity*.

Similarly we may slur the *preceding* vowel in

v. 1. 78. Foul whisp|rings are | abroad | unnat|ral deeds.  
 and in *corp'ral, discov'ry, temp'rance, persev'rance, gen'ral, moment'ry, conf'rence, ev'ry, murd'rous*, and perhaps *power, chamber, supper, disorder, Caesar, wonder, answer*. The spell-

ings *sprite* for *spirit*, and *parlous* for *perilous* seem to show that in certain cases at any rate the vowel was lost.

We also find the short vowel slurred with other liquids, as in *devil*, *devilish*, *heaven*, perhaps *villain* in

v. 3. 13. There is | ten thou|sand—geese |, vill'n—sol|diers Sir |.

and with *s*, as *min'ster*, *maj'sty*, *ecst'sy*. Compare III. 4. 2:

And last | the hear|ty wel|come. Thanks | to ^your maj|'sty.

[Also I. 6. 18, II. 3. 75, III. 4. 121.]

III. 2. 22. In rest|less ecst|'sy |. Duncan | is in | his grave |.

I. 5. 49. And take | my milk | for gall | you murd|'ring min|'sters.

In v. 3. 5.

All mor|tal cons|equences have | pronounced | me thus |  
there seems a double slurring due to the sibilant. In this and other cases the alternative lies not between slurring and trisyllabic feet, but between slurring and the Alexandrine, which to my ear would have a weak dragging effect in such a passage. Dr Abbott gives several examples (§ 471) of the dropping of the final *s* in the plural of words ending with a sibilant.

Possibly we ought to admit slurring of vowels after other consonants, as *surf'ted*, *fantast'cal*. One vowel preceding another is sometimes slurred, as *furi<sup>^</sup>ous*, *unusu<sup>^</sup>al*. Sometimes more than one letter seems to be omitted in pronunciation, as *instruments* is disyllabic according to Abbott, § 468. See examples in note<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> Perhaps it will be best to give the complete list of such doubtful lines for the reader to form his own judgment upon them.

- I. 7. 80. Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.
- III. 2. 18. In the affliction of these terrible dreams.
- III. 4. 78. Too terrible for the ear: the time has been.
- III. 4. 36. From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony.
- IV. 3. 138. Be like our warranted quarrel. Why're you silent?
- II. 2. 40. Chief nourisher in life's feast. What do you mean?
- V. 4. 6. The numbers of our host, and make discovery.
- IV. 3. 67. In nature is a tyranny: it hath been.
- IV. 3. 92. As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,  
Bounty, perseverance.



(c) It is difficult to find examples of undoubted trisyllabic feet; what would at first sight be taken for such being so often capable of other explanation, either on the principle of

- III. 4. 89. I drink to the general joy o' the whole table.
- III. 4. 55. The fit is momentary; upon a thought.
- III. 1. 79. In our last conference; passed in probation with you.
- IV. 3. 59. Sudden, voluptuous, smacking of every sin.
- II. 3. 123. The near|er blood|y|. This mur|derous shaft| that's shot|.
- I. 7. 76. Of his own chamber, and used their very daggers.
- III. 1. 87. Your patience so predominant in your nature.
- III. 1. 105. Whose execution takes your enemy off.
- III. 2. 31. Present him eminence both with eye and tongue.
- III. 6. 40. He did, and with an absolute 'Sir, not I.'
- [cf. I. 4. 14. An ab|solute trust|. . .| O worth|iest cou|sin.]
- III. 1. 117. To thy| good truth| and hon|our|. Devilish| Macbeth|.
- V. 7. 8. The devil himself could not pronounce a title.
- [cf. III. 4. 60, II. 2. 54.]
- IV. 3. 182. Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour.
- IV. 3. 57. In evils to top Macbeth. I grant him bloody.
- V. 3. 40. Canst thou not minister to a mind diseased,
- [cf. V. 3. 46, I. 5. 49.]
- III. 4. 86. I have a strange infirmity which is nothing.
- III. 2. 45. Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest chuck.
- [cf. I. 5. 63, II. 2. 36.]
- IV. 3. 64. All continent impediments would o'er|bear.
- V. 4. 19. Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate.
- IV. 2. 17. The fits| o' the sea|son|. I dare| not speak| much fur|ther.
- IV. 1. 152. His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls.
- III. 4. 36. 'Tis given| with wel|come|: to feed| were best| at home|.
- III. 1. 68. Given to the common enemy of man.
- [here given may be a trochee, making the next foot an anapaest.]
- IV. 3. 223. That were| most pre|cious to| me|. Did heaven| look on|.
- II. 2. 62. The multitudinous seas incarnadine.
- III. 1. 57. Mark An|tony's was| by Cae|sar|. He chid| the sis|ters.
- V. 4. 8. We learn no other but the confident tyrant.
- V. 2. 5. Excite the mortified man. Near Birnam wood.
- III. 2. 47. Scarf up the tender eye of pitiful day.
- II. 2. 5. The doors are open and the surfeited grooms.
- I. 3. 140. My thought| whose mur|der yet| is but| fantas|tical.
- II. 4. 14. And Duncan's horses, a thing most strange and certain.
- ['horses' probably one syllable, as Abbott, § 471.]
- III. 2. 48. And with thy bloody and invisible hand.
- V. 8. 41. The which no sooner had his prowess confirmed.
- II. 3. 114. Who can| be wise|, amazed|, temperate|, and fur|ious.
- ['temperate' and 'furious' both disyllabic.]
- II. 1. 12. He hath| been in| unu|sual plea|sure and|.

feminine rhythm or of slurring. The following seem to me the most probable :

- i. 7. 22. Striding | the blast | or heav|en's che|rubim<sup>1</sup> horsed | .
- ii. 3. 121. Unman|nerly breeched | with gore, | who could | refrain | .
- i. 5. 17. What thou | art pro|mised. Yet | do I fear | thy na|ture.
- i. 2. 45. What a haste | looks through | his eyes | ! So should | he  
look | .

(d) Alexandrines are most commonly found in lines divided between different speakers after the 3rd foot, e.g.

- iii. 1. 139. I'll come | to you | anon | —We are | resolved | my lord | .
- i. 2. 58. The vict|ory fell | on us | —Great hap|piness | —That now | .
- ii. 3. 3. And she | goes down | at twelve | —I tak't, | 'tis later | Sir | .
- iii. 3. 11. Already | are in | the court | —His hor|ses go | about | .
- iv. 2. 30. I take | my leave | at once | —Sirrah | your fa|ther's dead | .
- iii. 4. 121. Attend | his maj|esty | —A kind | good-night | to all | .

[though this may be read as an ordinary line by disyllabizing 'majesty.']

The following have the feminine rhythm at the end.

- i. 6. 10. The air | is deli|cate | —See, see | our hon|oured hos|tess.
- ii. 3. 79. The sleep|ers of | the house | —Speak, speak | — O gen|tle  
lad|y.
- v. 5. 17. The queen | my lord | is dead | --Sho should | have died |  
herea|fter.

- ii. 1. 17. In mea|sureless | content | . Being un|prepared | .
- ii. 3. 62. And pro|phesying | with ac|cents ter|rible | .
- v. 5. 28. Signi|fying no|thing | . Thou comest | to use | thy tongue | .
- ii. 3. 121. Unmannerly breeched with gore; who could refrain.
- i. 4. 45. I'll be myself the harbinger and make joyful.

[Abbott (§ 468) considers *messenger* and *passenger* to be disyllabic, and so perhaps *harbinger* here.]

- i. 3. 129. Of the imperial theme. I thank you, gentlemen.

[See Abbott (§ 461) for the pronunciation of *gentlemen*.]

- iv. 3. 239. Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer you may.

- iii. 1. 81. How you were borne in hand, how crossed, the instruments.

[We escape an Alexandrine by making *instruments* disyllabic. See Abbott, § 468.]

- i. 3. 111. Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was combined.

- v. 7. 18. Are hired to bear their staves: either thou Macbeth.

- iii. 6. 29. , Takes from his high respect: thither Macduff's gone.

[On the shortening of *whether*, *either*, *thither*, in pronunciation, see Abbott, § 466.]

<sup>1</sup> The *u* of 'cherubim' is always short in Shakespeare.

- IV. 1. 89. And top | of sov'reignty | —Listen | but speak | not to | it.  
 III. 6. 49. Under | a hand | accursed | —I'll send | my prayers with | him.

[As the emphasis is on *with* rather than *him*, it seems best to divide it thus.]

- III. 4. 73. Shall be | the maws | of kites | —What quite | unmanned | in  
 folly.

In the following instances the division is after the 1st, 2nd or 4th foot, or in the middle of the 4th.

- III. 2. 4. For a | few words | —Madam | I will | —Nought's had | all's  
 spent | .  
 III. 3. 15. Stand to't | —It will | be rain | to-night | —Let it | come down | .  
 III. 6. 39. Prepare | for some | attempt | of war | —Sent he | to Macduff.  
 V. 3. 37. How does | your patient, doctor? —Not | so sick | my lord | .  
 III. 4. 38. Meeting | were bare | without | it—Sweet | remem'brancer |  
 IV. 2. 72. I dare | abide | no longer—Whither should | I fly | .  
 V. 7. 11. I'll prove | the lie | thou speak'st—Thou | wast born | of  
 woman.

[If we read *speak'st* as in the Clarendon, we should compress *thou'st*, making a regular line.]

- III. 4. 2. And last | the hearty welcome—Thanks | to your majesty | .

[or the line may be divided into five feet if we slur the last part of *majesty*; it will then have a double feminine ending.]

The following Alexandrines have an extra syllable at the hemistich:

- II. 2. 30. When they | did say | God bless | us | —Consider it not | so  
 deeply.  
 II. 3. 58. For 'tis | my limited service | —Goes the | king hence | to-  
 day | .  
 V. 3. 8. Like syllable | of dolour | —What I | believe | I'll wail | .  
 I. 3. 85. That takes | the reason prisoner | —Your children shall |  
 be kings | .

Where the lines are not thus divided between two speakers, it is often possible to explain away apparent Alexandrines, either as containing trisyllabic feet, or by hypermetric syllables at the end or before the caesura, or, if we follow Dr Abbott, on the principle of slurring, as—

- III. 1. 80. In our | last conference |; passed in | probation with | you.  
 I. 3. 140. My thought | whose murder yet | is but | fantastical.

- i. 3. 129. Of the | imper|ial theme | , I thank | you gen|tlemen.  
 III. 1. 81. How you | were borne | in hand | , how crossed, | the inst|ru-  
 ments.  
 IV. 3. 239. Put on | their inst|ments | . Receive | what cheer | you may | .  
 III. 2. 22. In rest|less oc|st'sy. | Duncan | is in | his grave | .  
 i. 3. 111. Which he | deserves | to lose | whether he | was combined | .  
 IV. 3. 97. Acting | it ma|ny ways | . Nay 'd I power | I should | .

Sometimes the Alexandrine is due to wrong arrangement of lines. I have already mentioned that it seems better to treat the first two words of the following as a broken line;

- III. 2. 15. But let | the frame | of things | disjoint | both the | worlds  
 ,                    tren|ble.

The only remaining Alexandrines in Macbeth are, I believe, the following, some of which seem to me corrupt:

- i. 4. 26. Which do | but what | they should | by do|ing ev|erything | .

This line which is followed by the obscure 'safe toward your love and honour,' is so feeble in rhythm that it can hardly be genuine. Is it possible to contract 'every' into a monosyllable?

- IV. 3. 20. In an | imper|ial charge | . But I | shall crave | your  
 par|don.

Here there is a decided pause, and I should take the line as made up of two fragments, and therefore to be classed with what Dr. Abbott calls the trimeter couplet, of which we spoke before.

- III. 2. 11. With them | they think | on? Things | without | all rem|edy | .  
 Should be without regard, what's done is done.

In the former line, I think *all* is an interpolation; it injures the antithesis 'without remedy'—'without regard,' and gives a feeble dragging rhythm. In the same way, in i. 2, 66,

Our bos|om inte|rest. Go | pronounce | his pre|sent death | ,  
 And with | his for|mer title greet | Macbeth |

'present' seems to me interpolated, like 'all,' with the view of giving more force.

- IV. 1, 153. That trace | him in | his line | . No boast|ing like | a fool.  
 This deed | I'll do | before | this pur|pose cool.



Mr Ellis kindly allows me to reprint from the *Proceedings of the Philological Society* his remarks on the preceding analysis of Shakespeare's metre as exhibited in *Macbeth*.

"Lines which cannot be naturally divided into measures readily acknowledged by the ear when read, need not be noticed. No poet, I believe, ever writes such lines. When we find them in Shakspeare, we are bound to assume that we have not the whole or the correct version of the poet's words before us. Such lines may be exercises for ingenuity in correction; but they are at any rate *not* suited to become a basis for a metrical theory. This observation at once disposes of some of Dr Abbott's certainly original, but as I cannot help thinking, impossible scansions.

"If we were determining Shakspeare's own rhythmical habit as opposed to that of other writers,—a research now carefully pursued by many members of the New Shakspeare Society,—then we should have at once to reject from consideration all lines about which critics are yet doubtful as to whether they are Shakspeare's or not. It is evident that no theory should be founded except on undoubted instances. But we are not dealing with this investigation. Any line not rejected as defective or erroneous, or doubtful, or as simply a modern or possible emendation, is sufficient for our present purpose, whether Shakspeare wrote it or not.

"In considering the rhythm of any single line, we should also, as I have already said, remember that it is part of a passage, and that the poet rhythmises whole passages, not single lines—except at a very early stage of his art. This is more particularly the case in dramatic poetry, where the author will even change the metre, by reducing or extending the number of his measures, to produce an emotional effect. And this leads to the difficult question how far the dramatic poet intended his actors to give oral effect to his rhythms, how far he intended them to distinguish his verse from measured prose, and how far he himself felt the transition from verse to prose. It would take too much time to consider this, and I therefore content myself with indicating the point. In the mean time I shall assume, as the basis of a rhythmical inquiry, that a poet always means to be

rhythmical, whether he writes prose or verse; but, as Dionysius and Cicero well put it, verse is *in rhythm*, and prose is merely *rhythmical*, that is, verse follows a conscious and mainly enunciable law in the juxtaposition of syllables of different kinds (long and short in Sanscrit, Greek, Latin, Arabic, Persian; strong and weak in Modern Greek, Italian, Spanish, German, English), and prose follows a subjective and mainly non-enunciable feeling.

"Now I will endeavour to notice the principal points in Professor Mayor's notes on *Macbeth* in his own order.

"A. I.—Lines in defect, that is, having fewer than the normal five measures, are *not* necessarily defective. These may be called "short lines," and are common enough in conclusions and in parts of dialogue, but they also occur in the body of a speech, as in the following examples, where I mark the odd and even measures as I previously proposed.

- i. 2. 20. Till he faced | the slave].
- i. 2. 51. And fan | our peo]ple cold | .
- i. 5. 60. Shall sun | that mor]row see | .
- ii. 1. 41. As this | which now] I draw | .
- iii. 2. 32. Unsafe | the while] that we | .
- iii. 2. 51. Makes wing | to the rook]y wood | .
- iv. 3. 217. Did you | say all !] O hell]kite ! all ?].

"So many speeches end and begin with such short-measured lines, that when there is an "amphibious section," as Dr Abbott strangely calls it, the break of the sense must determine to which one of the two short lines, that it is able to complete into a full line, the poet meant it to be joined. To assume that it was intended to be part of both, seems almost ludicrous. Using this test I should divide

- iv. 3. 219. At one | fell swoop]. [short]  
Dispute | it like] a man. |—I shall] do so | .
- v. 3. 18. The English force] so please | you. [short]  
Take thy | face hence] Seyton ! | I'm sick] at heart | .
- ii. 4. 33. To be | invest]ed. [short]  
Where is Dun]can's bod]y ? Car]ried to] Colmekill | .
- iii. 2. 12. Should be | without] regard, | what's done] is done | .  
We've scotched | the snake] not kill'd | it. [short]
- v. 3. 34. Give me | my ar]mour. 'Tis | not need]ed yet | .  
I'll put | it on.] [short]

v. 8. 23. And break | it to] our hope | . [short]  
 I will | not fight] with thee ! |—Then yield] thee cow|ard.

“Observe that in “I will not fight with thee,” the utter tonelessness of the speech takes it almost beyond the bounds of rhythm. There is scarcely a strong syllable in the phrase, as I read it; the strongest is *not*, and the *I will* would be naturally contracted to *I'll*. Still it is possible to read :

I *will* | not fight] with *thee* | .

“There seems no reason anxiously to avoid these short lines. Thus, why not read ?

• III. 1. 44. Sirrah | a word] with you | .  
 Attend | these men] our pleas|ure.

“No thought of an Alexandrine need occur. Yet, as the omission of “Sirrah” or “with you,” would produce a regular line, no certainty is possible—or of consequence.

“In III. 2. 15, “but let the frame of things disjoint, both the worlds suffer,” there is no such reason as in I. 2. 37 (“So they”) to make one line of one measure, and another of five measures. Such a division is, I think, really unusual. Considered as one line, although there are six measures, there is no Alexandrine rhythm. The conclusion, “both the worlds suffer,” is that of a regular five-measure line, with a pause at “disjoint,” where the Folios divide the line. There is possibly some error. The initial “but” is not required, and is rather prosy. By omitting it, and making an initial trisyllabic measure, regularity is restored :

Let the frame | of things] disjoint : | both the] worlds suf|fer.

It is therefore a line from which we can conclude nothing.

“I also cannot accept the scansion of IV. 3. 28, given by Professor Mayor on p. 149. It seems to me entirely unlike the rhythm of the rest of Macbeth, especially in ending a line with “but” after a comma, that is, the “weak ending,” and in the two initial measures of the strong weak form. I would rather divide ,

Without | leave ta]king.  
 I pray | you,

[short, pause]  
 [short, initial]



Let not | my jeal|ousies | be your] dishon|ours,  
 But mine | own safe|ties. You | may be right|ly just,  
 Whatev|er I] shall think |.—Bleed, bleed,] poor coun|try.

“But I strongly suspect the genuineness of the text throughout this scene; and here the words, “I pray you,” which are quite unnecessary, may be a mere insertion, or part of a player’s “cut.”

“A. II.—“Lines defective in their internal structure,” for reasons already explained, may be omitted. Each requires a separate critical examination, either on the ground of pronunciation or alteration, which takes it out of the present investigation.

“B. I.—A superfluous syllable at the end of a line, or even two such, when both are very weak, must be admitted as common in heroic rhythm, especially when dramatic. The greater or less liking for it by particular poets is altogether another inquiry. But as to the existence of such syllables at the end of the second or third measure, after a pause, or closing a speech, Professor Mayor is right in supposing that I should treat them in almost every case as cases of trisyllabic measures. And for this reason: the continuation may or may not begin with a weak syllable; when it does not, the final syllable of the preceding section is evidently effective, that is, *not* superfluous. Why should it not be so in other cases, when it merely introduces a regular variety, namely a trisyllabic measure. Thus in

I. 4. 11. As 'twere | a care]less tri|fle.—There's] no art |

the last syllable of “trifle” acts in the usual way. But read “there is] no art’,” with an emphasis (which the passage allows), and we have a trisyllabic fourth measure. There is, therefore, no reason for considering “-fle” a superfluous syllable in this case rather than the other.

I. 4. 27. Safe toward | your love] and hon|our.—Wel]come hith|er.

Here “-our” is effective. Had the reading been “Thou’rt wel]come hith’er,” would “-our” have ceased to be effective? I find no need for such a supposition.

I. 5. 36. Than would | make up] his mes|sage.—Give] him tend|ing.

Here “-sage” is effective, why then not “-stant” in

I. 5. 57. The fu|ture in] the in|stant.—My dear|est love?

Might we not omit "my," without the slightest influence on the rhythm of the first section? But then "-stant" must be effective, not superfluous. Without considering every line, I will mark the measures in a few, where this "superfluous" syllable is *not* part of the trisyllabic measure which it introduces. Generally it will be seen that when this weak syllable is followed by a strong one, we have a regular weak-strong measure. But the final weak syllable of the first section may be followed by another weak one, making a weak-weak measure; though it is then more commonly part of a trisyllabic measure of the weak-weak-strong class, and even a weak-weak-weak measure is possible.

- III. 1. 25. 'Twixt this | and sup]per: go | not my horse] the bet]ter.  
 III. 1. 31. Craving | us joint]ly. Hie | you to horse:] adieu | .  
 III. 1. 79. In our | last con]ference, passed | in proba]tion with | you.  
 III. 2. 19. That shake | us night]ly. Bet]ter be with] the dead.  
 IV. 3. 229. Convert | to an]ger. Blunt | not the heart,] enrage | it.  
 v. 6. 4. Lead our | first bat]tle. Worth]y Macduff] and we |  
 IV. 3. 117. To thy | good truth] and hon]our. Dev']lish Macbeth | .

[Read "dev'lish" in two syllables, it is not once necessarily of three syllables in Shakspeare, even at the end of a line, as in *Rich. III.*, I. 4. 265,

Not to | relent] is beast]ly sav]age dev']lish.]

- IV. 3. 33. For good]ness dare] not check | thee. Wear] thou thy wrongs | .

[Perhaps "thou" is erroneous, as it is quite superfluous.]

III. 6. 2. Which can | inter]pret fur]ther. On]ly, I say, |

v. 8. 27. Here may | you see] the ty]rant. I'll | not yield | .

[Read *I'll* and emphasise *not*, saving the rhythm by the weight of *yield*.]

- III. 4. 86. I have | a strange] infir]mity, which] is noth]ing  
 To those | that know] me. [short line, decided pause]  
 Come, love | and health] to all; | then I'll] sit down | .  
 Give me | some wine !] fill full ! | [short, order]  
 I drink | to the gen]eral joy | o' the] whole ta]ble.

[This might be divided thus, if the text is correct—Pope omits "come" in v. 88, but it seems better left in.]

"*B. II.*—Much of the so-called "slurring," and almost all the "elision," when not usual in common conversation, I find unnecessary, that is, I see no reason for not reading the words fully, with a natural pronunciation. As to Alexandrines divided among two speakers, there is always a doubt, because only two short lines may have been intended. These lines, therefore, lie out of my present province. When a five-measure line ends with two light superfluous syllables, it does not become an Alexandrine to the feeling of the reader, and there is no occasion to suppose one of these light syllables to be elided. The words "fantastical, gentlemen, instruments," give rise to such terminations. In the middle of lines they simply produce trisyllabic feet, as

III. 2. 22. In rest|less ec]stasy. Dun|can is in] his grave | .

IV. 3. 239 may be divided thus

Put on   their in]struments.	[short, pause]
Receive   what cheer   you may,	[short, initial]
The night   is long] that never finds] the day.	

I suspect, however, some error in "receive." A monosyllable, such as "have," would suit the rhythm, and occurs with "cheer" in other passages, *Rich. III.*, v. 3. 74: "I have not that alacrity of spirit, Nor cheer of mind," and *All's Well*, III. 2. 67: "I prithee, lady, have a better cheer." Whereas "receive cheer" is not used elsewhere. Certainly an Alexandrine would be very much out of place as the first line of a final rhyming couplet, and even the break, with short lines, is not what we should expect. But this enters into the region of conjecture and criticism which I wish to avoid. I pass over all the other lines where Professor Mayor suspects errors. And the rest of his remarks referring to the measures strong-strong and strong-weak, (which he calls spondees and trochees), in place of the theoretical weak-strong, merely bear out my own observations. "

"In reading through *Macbeth* afresh for this purpose, the general impression made on me is that the character of five-measure lines is well preserved. The fifth measure of each verse ends strongly, with often one, and occasionally two additional very weak syllables. I have not observed any so-called "weak-

endings." Sometimes, not often, the fifth measure has two weak syllables. But two weak syllables<sup>1</sup> are also allowed to form a measure elsewhere, as the second in

III. 1. 96. Distin|guishes] the swift | the slow] the sub|tle.

III. 1. 97. Accor|ding to] the gift | which bount|eous nature.

"Trisyllabic measures are common enough, perhaps more common than our present utterance shews. The lines are generally vigorous, and rhythm varied. But there are probably numerous errors of the printer and copyist, as indeed the Cambridge editors allow, "especially as regards metre," to use their own words. This makes the selection of this play rather unsuitable for the determination of Shakspeare's metres, and, as Professor Mayor states, it was not purposely so selected. There are a very large number of short lines, especially when ending and beginning speeches. Whether this was intentional, or is to be reckoned among errors, or arose from players' "cuts," cannot be determined. Generally they do not produce a bad effect. Long lines, especially real Alexandrines, are not numerous, and perhaps were never intentional."

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 39.

## CHAPTER XI.

### SHAKESPEARE'S BLANK VERSE—*continued*.

#### HAMLET.

As Mr Ellis doubts whether *Macbeth* was a good play to choose for the purpose of determining the rhythm used by Shakespeare in his prime, I give the results of a similar study of *Hamlet*, so far as they seem to be of interest in the way of confirming, correcting or adding to the results already obtained.

To speak first of the accent. Excess and defect of accent, the spondee and the pyrrhic, are common alike in all the feet. As examples we may take

- i. 2. 82. Togeth|er with | all forms | , moods, shapes | of grief |  
<sub>0 1 0 0 2 1 1 1 0 1</sub>
- iii. 2. 225. Thoughts black | , hands apt | , drugs fit | , and time |  
<sub>1 1 1 1 1 1 0 1</sub>  
 agree|ing  
<sub>0 1</sub>
- iv. 5. 190. His means | of death , his ob|scure fu|neral  
<sub>0 1 0 1 0 0 2 2 0 1</sub>
- i. 5. 61. Upon | my se|cure hour | thy un|cle stole |  
<sub>0 1 0 0 2 1 0 1 0 1</sub>
- i. 1. 18. Disas|ters in | the sun | ; and the | moist star |  
<sub>0 1 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 1</sub>

Inversion of accent (trochee) is most commonly found in the 1st foot, sometimes giving the effect of a *choriambus* at the beginning of the verse, or after the middle pause or caesura, of which latter we may take the following as examples

- i. 1. 2. Nay, ans|wer me | : stand, and | unfold | yourself |  
<sub>1 1 0 1 2 0 1 0 1</sub>
- i. 1. 13. The ri|vals of | my watch | : bid them | make haste |  
<sub>0 1 0 0 0 1 2 0 0 1</sub>

But we also find it in the other feet without any preceding pause, sometimes giving the effect of an *antispastus*, as

- I. 3. 56. The wind | sits in | the shoul|der of | your sail |  
 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 0 1  
 II. 2. 573. Been struck | so to | the soul | , that pres|ently  
 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 2 0 1  
 I. 5. 166. There are | more things | in heaven | and earth Horatio  
 0 0 2 1 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 Than are | dreamt of | in your | philos|ophy |  
 0 0 2 1 1 0 0 1 0 1

(taking 'your' in a contemptuous sense).

- I. 2. 13. In e|qual scale | weighing | delight | and dole |  
 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 2 0 1  
 I. 3. 38. Virtue | itself | scapes not | calum|nious strokes |  
 2 0 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 1  
 I. 4. 42. Be thy | intents | wicked | or char|itab|le  
 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 2 0 1  
 I. 5. 15. Till the | foul crimes | done in | my days | of na|ture  
 1 0 2 1 1 0 0 1 0 1  
 IV. 3. 3. Yet must | not we | put the | strong law | upon | him  
 0 2 0 1 1 0 1 0 1  
 I. 4. 46. Why thy | canon|ized bones | hearsed | in death | \*  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 1  
 II. 1. 81. Pale as | his shirt | ; his knees | knock|ing | each oth|er  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 1  
 III. 2. 55. No ! let | the can|died tongue | lick ab|surd pomp |  
 2 1 0 1 0 1 2 0 1 1  
 IV. 5. 84. And, as | the world | were now | but to | begin |  
 1 1 0 1 0 1 1 0 0 1  
 I. 2. 37. To bus|iness with | the king | more than | the scope |  
 0 1 0 0 0 1 2 0 0 1  
 I. 2. 222. And we | did think | it writ | down in | our du|ty  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 1 0 0 1  
 I. 3. 64. Of each | new-hatch'd | unfledg'd | comrade | . Beware |  
 0 1 1 2 1 2 1 0 0 1

(I keep the usual accentuation of *comrade*, as in *Lear* II. 4. 213.)

- I. 4. Let's fol|low ; 'tis | not fit | thus to | obey | him  
 0 1 0 1 0 2 2 0 0 1  
 I. 5. 139. For your | desire | to know | what is | between | us  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 1  
 I. 1. 93. Had he | been van|quisher ; as | by the same | cov'nant |  
 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 1

(here we might make the 4th foot a pyrrhic, putting *same* into the last foot, which would then have a superfluous syllable).

- I. 2. 53. He hath | my lord | wrung from | me my | slow leave |  
 0 1 0 1 2 1 0 0 2 1  
 I. 3. 4. But let | me hear | from you | .  
 0 1 0 1 0 1

Do you | doubt that |  
 0 0 2 1

- I. 4. 65. I do | not set | my life | at a | pin's fee |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 2 1

\* In Shakespeare *canonize* regularly has the accent on the 2nd syllable.

II. 1. 86. But tru|ly I | do fear | it.  
                   0    1   0   0    0   1    0  
   What | said he |  
   1       1    0

(the stress seems to lie on *said*, in contrast with the appearance of Hamlet described before, not on *he*).

III. 4. 15. Have you | forgot | me?  
                   0       0       0   2       0  
                                   No | by the rood | , not so |  
                                   2       0    0    1       2    1

We next take examples of irregularity in the number of syllables, and (A) by way of excess;

(a) Superfluous syllable at the end (feminine ending),

This, as is well known, is rare in the early plays, such as *Love's Labour Lost*, where it occurs only twice in the first 50 lines of the 1st Act, and only once in the first 50 of the 2nd Act. On the contrary in the King's speech (*Hamlet* I. 2. 1—39) we find 12 examples, i.e. nearly 1 in 3, and in the same scene (87—102) 10 examples in 16 lines, and in Hamlet's speech in the same scene (146—153) 5 examples in 7 lines, a proportion only exceeded in the un-Shakspearian portions of *Henry VIII*.

Taking Mr Fleay's figures as given in p. 15 of the *New Shakspeare Soc. Trans.* for 1874<sup>1</sup> we obtain the following general averages.

	Blank Verse.	Double Endings.	Proportion.
<i>L. L. L.</i>	579	9	one in 64½.
<i>Rom. and Jul.</i>	2111	118	one in less than 18
<i>Hamlet</i>	2490	508	one in less than 5
<i>Cymbeline</i>	2585	726	one in little more than 3½.

But Dr Abbott has pointed out (*N. S. Soc.*, ib. p. 76) that though we may trace on the whole a steady increase in the use of the feminine ending, as we pass from the earlier to the later plays, yet such double endings are very unequally distributed through the scenes of the same play. Thus he contrasts *Rich. II.* Act I. Sc. 1, which he calls 'a spirited scene with a sort of trumpet sound about it,' and in which there is free use of the extra syllable (24 in 146 lines), with Act v. Sc. 5 containing

<sup>1</sup> Reprinted in his *Shakespeare Manual*, p. 135.

Richard's soliloquy in prison, where the extra syllable occurs only once in 119 lines. And he thus states the occasions on which it is used, 'in moments of passion and excitement, in questions, in quarrel, seldom in quiet dialogue and narrative, and seldom in any serious or pathetic passage.' The phrase 'trumpet sound' does not commend itself to me as applicable here, but otherwise Dr Abbott's remarks agree fairly with my observations in *Hamlet*, except that I should add 'especially in the light and airy conversation of polite society.' Thus to take the extremes of the use of the feminine ending in *Hamlet*, we find it most freely used in

iv. 5. 76—96. The King to the Queen; average almost one in 2.

v. 2. 237—276. Dialogue between Hamlet and Laertes; average the same.

i. 3. 91—135. Polonius to Ophelia (omitting Ophelia's replies); average one out of  $2\frac{1}{2}$ .

The average is one in less than 3, in the King's speech to the Ambassadors and Laertes (i. 2. 1—56), and in the King's speech to Hamlet (i. 2. 87—117).

If we examine these scenes, we find that in the conversation between Hamlet and Laertes there is on both sides a straining after excessive courtesy, partly because they are about to enter into a contest of personal prowess, but even more from the wish, on Hamlet's part, to atone for previous rudeness, and, on the part of Laertes, to hide his murderous intention. By the use of the feminine ending the poet endeavours to reproduce the easy tone of ordinary life; and this no doubt explains its frequency in Fletcher, the poet of society. There is felt to be something formal, stilted, high-flown, poetic, in the regular iambic metre. Three of the other scenes contain speeches by the King. Now the King, we know from *Hamlet*, is a 'smiling villain'; he affects affability and ease; there is nothing strong or straightforward in his character, but he carries his point by cunning subtilty, 'with witchcraft of his wit.' The same explanation will account for the prevalence of feminine rhythm in the speech of the worldly-wise Polonius.



Consider now the opposite extreme.

- I. 1. 112—125. Horatio's speech, average one in 14.
- III. 4. 31—87. Hamlet's speech to his mother, one in 9.
- " 140—216 " " one in 6.
- IV. 4. 32—66. Hamlet's soliloquy, one in 7.
- III. 1. 56—88. " " one in 7.
- I. 5. 10—91. Ghost's speech, one in less than 7.
- II. 2. 473—540. Old play ('The rugged Pyrrhus'), one in 6½.
- III. 3. 73—96. Hamlet (seeing his uncle praying), one in 5½.
- " 36—71. King's soliloquy, one in 5.

Horatio's speech commencing 'A mote it is to trouble the mind's eye,' is a piece of fine imaginative poetry, standing in strong contrast with his preceding rapid business-like statement about the claim of Fortinbras. In place of the rough, broken rhythm of the former speech, we have here some four or five of the most musically varied lines in Shakespeare, marked by slow movement, long vowels and alliteration. It is only as Horatio descends to earth again, that we have the double ending in l. 124. In Hamlet's speech to his mother, he appears as a stern preacher, obeying the command received from his murdered father. Plainly there is no place here for ease and politeness. The same may be said of the ghost's speech, only that it has an added solemnity. The old play is necessarily regular and formal. Soliloquies, if quietly meditative, or the outpouring of a pleasing emotion, will naturally take the regular poetic form: if agitated, or vehemently argumentative they will be irregular, marked by the use of sudden pauses, feminine ending and trisyllabic feet, as we see in I. 2. 129—160 'O that this too too solid flesh would melt,' &c. This is remarkably shewn in the speech beginning 'To be or not to be', where we find five double endings in the first 8 lines, these being perplexed and argumentative; but in the next 20 lines there is not a single feminine ending, as these are merely the pathetic expression of a single current of thought. Then in l. 83 follow reflections of a more prosaic turn, and we again have two double endings. It may be noticed that in the soliloquies III. 3. 36—96, six of the twelve double endings consist of the word *heaven* or *prayers*, which are hardly

to be distinguished from monosyllables. One other instance may be quoted to illustrate Shakespeare's use of the feminine ending. In I. 1. 165 Horatio says

So have | I heard | and do | in part | believe | it.  
But, look | , the morn | in rus|set man|tle clad | ,  
Walks o'er | the dew | of yon | high east|ward hill | .

The 1st line is conversational, the two others imaginative without passion, only with a joyful welcome of the calm, bright, healthy dawn after the troubled, spectral night; and we have a corresponding change in the rhythm.

I think Dr Abbott goes too far in saying (*S. G.* § 455) that the extra syllable is very rarely a monosyllable. No doubt it is very rarely an 'emphatic monosyllable,' but pronouns such as *you, it, him, them, &c.* are common enough, e.g.

I. 1. 104. So by | his fath|er lost | : and this | I take | it

cf. I. 1. 165, 172, I. 5. 119, 121 ;

I. 2. 234. Nay ve|ry pale | .

And fixed | his eyes | upon | you

cf. I. 3. 24, 95, I. 5. 129, 138, 180, 183, 185 ;

I. 3. 57. And you | are stayed | for. There | , my bles|sing with | theo

I. 3. 103. Do you | believe | his ten|ders as | you call | them

cf. I. 4. 24 ;

I. 4. 39. Angels | and min|isters | of grace | defend | us

cf. I. 5. 139 ;

I. 4. 84. By heaven | I'll make | a ghost | of him | that lets | me

cf. II. 2. 125 ;

I. 4. 87. Let's foll|ow ; 'tis | not meet | thus to | obey | him

cf. I. 5. 113, II. 1. 13, 19, 29 ;

II. 2. 143. This must | not be | and then | I pre|cepts gave | her.

We also find *not* in I. 1. 67 ;

In what | partic|ular thought | to work | I know | not.

Sometimes the line ends with two superfluous syllables, more or less slurred, e.g.

I. 2. 57. Have you | your fa|ther's leave? | What says | Polo|nius

119. I pray | thee stay | with us | ; go not | to Wit|tenberg

176. My lord | I came | to see | your fa|ther's fu|neral

II. 2. 459. The un|nerved fa|ther falls | . Then sense|less I|lium

II. 2. 91. And ted|iousness | the limbs | and out|ward flour|ishes

II. 2. 70. To give | the assay | of arms | against | your maj|esty

cf. III. 1. 22,

II. 2. 539. What's He|cuba | to him | or he | to Hec|uba

(b) Superfluous syllable in the middle of the line (feminine section or caesura).

I think Mr Ellis has succeeded in shewing that the assumption of the 'section' is not essential to the scanning of any line; and the fact that there is so little trace of it in Surrey and Marlowe is not in favour of Dr Guest's idea, that it was still felt to be obligatory in Shakespeare's time. Shakespeare however would seem to have perceived the gain to the heroic rhythm, which would arise from making more use of the caesura; and I think that the extra syllable which so often precedes the caesura in his verse, must have been felt by him to be analogous to the feminine ending. It is a difficult point to prove; but the following facts are in accordance with such a supposition: (1) the frequent use of a trochee in the 3rd or 4th foot, when a pause has preceded, corresponding to the trochee in the 1st foot; (2) the large proportion of cases in which an unaccented syllable preceding the caesura is non-effective, *i.e.* not needed for the metre. In the first two scenes of Hamlet we have 46 lines with such a syllable, in 21 of which it is superfluous; (3) the fact that short or broken lines often end with a superfluous syllable, which in them, at any rate, must be regarded as a feminine ending, and the further fact that many of the lines, in which the feminine caesura occurs, are really made up of two broken lines, e.g.

I. 1. 17. Who hath | relieved | you ?

Bernar|do hath | my place |

I. 2. 160. Hail to | your lord|ship.

I'm glad | to see | you well |

i. 2. 167. I'm ve|ry glad | to see | you.

Good ev|en Sir |

v. 2. 332. To tell | my sto|ry.

What war|like noise | is this | .

In such lines it seems a little absurd to keep the unaccented syllable in suspension, as it were, through a lengthened pause, until the latter part of the anapaest is forthcoming. (4) If we compare with the trisyllabic feet, which are produced by treating the extra syllable as metrically effective, those trisyllabic feet which are unconnected with the caesura, we find many more of the former; thus, in the first two scenes of *Hamlet*, I find 16 of what, I may call, the true or independent trisyllabic feet, and 21 of the apparent trisyllabic feet, which make use of the extra syllable of the caesura. (5) Sometimes we find two superfluous unaccented syllables before the middle pause, which can only be made metrically effective by changing the line into an Alexandrine, as

i. 5. 162. A wor|thy pi|oneer. Once more | remove | good friends |

ii. 1. 112. I had | not quo|ted him : I feared | he did | but tri|fle

(c) True anapaests are found in all the feet; dactyls rarely, except in the 1st foot.

ii. 1. 25. Ay, or drink|ing, fen|cing, swear|ing, quar|relling |

iii. 1. 154. The observ'd | of all | obser|vers, quite | , quite down |

v. 1. 241. To o'er|top | old Pel|ion or | the sky|ish head |

iv. 5. 13. Twere good | she were spo|ken with | ; for she | may strew |

ii. 2. 554. Tweaks me | by the nose | , gives me | the lie | i' the throat |

i. 2. 93. Of imp|ious stub|bornness ; 'tis | unman|ly grief |

i. 2. 157. With such | dexter|ity | to inces|tuous sheets |

i. 1. 86. Did slay | this Fort|inbras, who | by a seal'd | compact |

i. 1. 114. A lit|tle ere | the migh|tiest Ju|lius fell |

The graves | stood ten|antless | and the shee|d dead |

ii. 1. 107. What, have | you given | him an|y hard words | of late |

i. 1. 83. Thereto | prick'd on | by a | most em|ulate pride |

i. 2. 83. That can | denote | me truly : these | indeed seem |

(or we might treat this as a case of feminine caesura and divide the last two feet

these in|deed seem | )  
                   2   0   1   2

- i. 4. 31. Carrying | I say | the stamp | of one | defect |  
                   1   0   0
- iv. 4. 40. Bestial | obliv|ion or | some cra|ven scrup|le  
                   1   0 0           0 0   1
- iv. 5. 13. Dangerous | con|jec|tures in | ill-breed|ing minds |  
                   1   0   0
- i. 5. 133. I'm sor|ry they | offend | you, hear|tily | ;  
                   Yes, faith | , heartily  
                   2       1           1   0 0

There's no | offence | my lord.

(d) Lines of six feet (Alexandrines) are very rare, except when they are divided between two speakers. What seem to be undivided Alexandrines are sometimes lines with two superfluous syllables, or they are possibly corrupt, or admit of other explanations, as follows.

- i. 2. 2. The mem|ory | be green | , and that | it us | befit|ted.

I incline to omit *that it* with Steevens. It is a cumbrous phrase, apparently inserted to facilitate the construction.

- i. 3. 24. Whereof | he is | the head | . Then, if | he says | he loves | you

I think Pope is right in omitting *the*.

- i. 5. 13. Are burnt | and purged | away | . But that | I am | forbid |

I should read *I'm* and make the 4th foot an anapaest.

- i. 5. 187. God wil|ling, shall | not lack | . Let us | go in | toget|her

I think Hanmer is right in omitting *together*, which may have been inserted from below.

- ii. 1. 57. Or then | , or then | , with such | , or such | , and, as | you say |

Pope omits the 2nd *or then*. I think it is better to consider this a line of prose, like i 5, 176, 7 (As 'well, well, we know,' &c.)

- ii. 1. 112. I had | not quo|ted him | : I fear'd | he did | but tri|fle  
                   And meant | to wreck | thee ; but | beshrew | my. jeal|ousy |

The former line should, I think, be read with two superfluous syllables at the hemistich: in the latter I should omit

*but*, which is not wanted here, and may perhaps have slipped in from the previous line.

II. 2. 564. Fie up|on't ! foh ! | About | , my brain | ! Hum, I | have heard |  
I have no doubt that the first three words at any rate should be joined to the previous broken line. They continue in the same strain of self-disgust; while a new start is taken with 'About my brain,' which might well be preceded and followed by a pause.

III. 2. 373. Conta|gion to | this world | : now could | I drink | hot blood |  
The Quarto of 1637 has *the* for *this*, which is both more natural in itself, and has the further advantage of reducing the line to the ordinary number of feet.

IV. 3. 7. But nev|er the | offence | . To bear | all smooth | and e|ven  
Here we might take *never* as one syllable (*ne'er*), like *ever* and *over*; but I see no objection to supposing that we have here two broken lines, separated by a pause.

IV. 5. 79. For good | Polon|ius' death | ; and we | have done | but green|ly  
I should omit *and* with Pope. The clause, which it introduces, is not one of the series of sorrows named, but a parenthetical regret, suggested by one of them, viz. the discontent of the people.

IV. 5. 137. Of your | dear fa|ther's death | , is't writ | in your | revenge |  
This seems more like a true Alexandrine than any other line in the Play, but the word *dear* may easily have been inserted, and perhaps it is more in harmony with the lofty tone assumed by the king, to abstain from the use of any coaxing word, until Laertes recedes from his personal threats.

IV. 7. 182. Unto | that el|ement | : but long | it could | not ,be |  
Here I think we have two superfluous syllables at the hemistich.

I. 2. 90. That fa|ther lost | lost his | , and the | survi|vor bound |

Both metre and construction lead one to suspect error here, but no satisfactory emendation has been proposed.

## V. 2. 68

—is't | not per|fect con|science  
 To quit | him with | this arm | ? And is't | not to | be damn'd |

I think Hanmer is right in omitting *and*. If any word were wanted, it should rather be *nay*.

## B. Syllabic defect.

I do not know that I need add anything to what has been said on Fragmentary Lines, except in reference to Mr Ellis's remark, that it seems ludicrous to suppose a 'common section' to be intended to complete two broken lines. I do not of course suppose it to be actually repeated, but the remembrance of the rhythm to affect and, as it were, justify the following rhythm. At any rate it seems to me a fact that, when we have three broken lines in succession, the 2nd as a rule fits into the 1st, and the 3rd into the 2nd, so that, to the ear, three halves seem to constitute two wholes. Thus in I. 2. 226 foll. I think the effect to the ear is as follows:

Armed say | you? Armed | my lord | . From top | to toe | ?  
 [From top | to toe] My lord | from head | to foot |  
 Then saw | you not | his face | ? O, yes | my lord |  
 [O, yes | my lord] he wore | his bea|ver up | .  
 What ; looked | he frown|ingly | ? A countenance more |  
 In sor|row than | in an|ger. Pale | or red | ?

Thus arranged we see the reason for the rhythm of the last three words, which are generally printed by themselves, as a short line. Otherwise, to make them rhythmical, we should have to treat *pale* as a monosyllabic first foot. Of the few Defective Lines in Hamlet, one or two are plainly corrupt, as

III. 4. 169. And ei|ther ^ | the devil | or throw | him out |  
 IV. 1. 40. And what's | untime|ly done | ^

and in others it is at any rate probable that a word has been lost, as in

II. 1. 83. To speak | of hor|rors, | he comes | before | me  
 where Pope inserts *thus* before *he*.

II. 1. 91. As he | would draw | it. | Long stayed | he so |  
 where Pope inserts *time* after *long*.

III. 3. 38. A broth|er's mur|der. | Pray can | I not

Here Hammer reads *Pray, alas, I cannot*, but the pause after *murder* may perhaps supply the place of a syllable.

IV. 4. 17. Truly | to speak | and | with no | addition

Pope improves both metre and construction by the insertion of *it* after *speak*.

IV. 4. 65. To hide | the slain | . O | from this | time forth |

Pope inserts *then* after *O*, but the exclamation may easily cover the two syllables.

I. 3. 8. Forward | not per|manent | , sweet | not last|ing

Capell inserts *but* after *sweet*. Possibly the pause and the length of the word may be considered to make up for the missing syllable.

I. 1. 50. Stay ! speak, speak ! I charge thee, speak !

Here it would seem that each of the first three words stands for a foot.

III. 4. 177. One word more, good lady.

What shall I do ?

Here it is possible to get the proper number of feet by giving two syllables either to *word* or *more*.

IV. 7. 60. Will you be ruled by me ?

Ay, my lord.

Walker inserts *good* before *lord*, but we may perhaps disyllabise *ay*, as in IV. 3. 45.

For Eng|land. For Eng|land ? A|y Ham|let. Good |

and

II. 1. 36. Wherefore | should you | do this | ? Ay | my lord |

Of Fragmentary Lines occurring at the beginning, middle, or end of longer speeches, and not supplemented by other short lines, I find 66, of which 3 consist of one syllable, as 'Swear'; 9 of two, as 'Mark you,' 'Yet I'; 8 of three, as 'Speak to me,' 'I have sworn't,' 'a scullion'; 14 of four, as 'Last night of all'; 12 of five, as 'Thou know'st already'; 13 of six, as 'To hear him so inclined'; 7 of seven, as 'What is the cause, Laertes?'



## CHAPTER XII.

### MODERN BLANK VERSE.

#### TENNYSON AND BROWNING.

WE have seen (p. 14 *fol.*) that Dr Guest condemns the freedom of Milton's versification as licentious, and that Dr Abbott to some extent shares his view in so far as regards Milton's use of trochees and trisyllabic feet (p. 38 *fol.*). It may be well therefore to begin with an analysis of the Miltonic rhythm in order to appreciate better the license practised by the poets of our own time, both in respect of pauses and of the substitution of other feet in place of the iamb. I have accordingly taken sections of 200 lines each from the poems of Milton, Tennyson and Browning, with a view to ascertain the comparative frequency of the occurrence of such irregularities. Though it is probable that no two persons would agree precisely as to the pauses and the feet to be found in a passage of some length, yet for the purpose of comparison, this will not make very much difference. As a rule I have followed the printed stopping, except when it appeared to me that this had reference rather to the grammatical construction than to the actual reading of the verse.

The passages selected are Milton (*a*) *Par. Reg.* 1 1—200, (*β*) *ib.* 201—400; Tennyson *Oenone, Gardener's Daughter*,

*Enoch Arden, Lucretius, Gareth, Balin, Sisters, Sir John Oldcastle; Browning Aristophanes, Ring and Book IV.* I have analyzed the 1st at length, and contented myself with tabulating the results of the others.

*Par. Reg.* 1 1—200.

*Pauses.* Lines with final pause only, 53, or a little over 1 in 4.

Lines with internal pause only, 71, or a little over 1 in 3.

Lines without any pause, 30, or a little over 1 in 7.

Pause after 1st syllable, 1 in 200<sup>1</sup>.

after 1½ syllables<sup>2</sup>, 2 in 200 or 1 in 100.

after 2                   <sup>3</sup>, 10, or 1 in 20.

after 3                   10, or 1 in 20.

after 4                   28, or 1 in about 7.

after 5                   15, or 1 in 13½.

after 6                   38, or 1 in about 5½.

after 7                   14, or 1 in about 14½.

after 8                   12, or 1 in 16½.

after 9               ,,     1 in 200.

*Feminine Ending*<sup>4</sup>. 12, or 1 in 16½.

*Substitution of other feet in place of the iamb.*

Pyrrhic. 58 out of 200, or 1 in a little over 3½ lines.

Spondee. 69, or 1 in less than 3.

Trochee. 48, or 1 in 4½.

(of which 12 are not initial, or 1 in 16½).

Anapaest. 42, or 1 in a little over 5.

Dactyl. 2, or 1 in 100.

<sup>1</sup> Of course a line with two or more internal pauses is reckoned more than once in this list.

<sup>2</sup> By this I mean pause after initial trochee.

<sup>3</sup> By this I mean a pause after the 1st foot when it is iamb, spondee, pyrrhic, dactyl or anapaest; and so,

throughout, the even numbers denote the end, the odd the middle of a foot, the figures being suited to the pure iambic line.

<sup>4</sup> In reckoning feminine endings and trisyllabic feet I have given the full number of syllables to doubtful words, such as *power, heaven*.

	Milton		Tennyson								Browning	
	<i>a</i>	<i>β</i>	<i>Oenone</i>	<i>Gard. D.</i>	<i>Arden</i>	<i>Lacrétius</i>	<i>Sisters</i>	<i>Gareth</i>	<i>Balta</i>	<i>Oldcastle</i>	<i>Aristoph.</i>	<i>R. and B.</i>
<i>Pauses</i>												
Final only	53	39	53	51	75	49	48	*		42	53	49
Internal only	71	77	65	59	45	75	57			48	45	45
None	30	19	17	17	19	29	29			11	19	35
After 1st syll.	1	1	2	4	7	8	6	13	10	16	7	15
1½	2	0	5	1	1	6	1	5	7	1	3	1
2	10	16	8	7	5	9	11	13	14	18	3	10
3	10	15	14	14	13	22	12	16	15	19	27	16
4	28	21	23	40	21	31	39	34	29	50	27	23
5	15	12	44	15	19	22	25	12	26	20	30	25
6	38	45	26	32	18	12	30	29	18	25	21	14
7	14	20	19	26	31	23	22	14	27	18	32	15
8	12	18	4	11	3	29	11	17	22	14	5	8
9	1	3	0	7	3	6	16	7	14	5	5	2
<i>Feminine ending</i>	12	10	14	1	8	5	13	6	6	15†	1	0
<i>Substitution</i>												
Pyrrhic	58	49	66	48	66						31	
Spondee	69	75	45	61	51						80	
Trochee (initial)	36	33	48	33	46	37	26	44	30	34	65	
(not initial)	12	24	2	11	7	6	6	7	7	12	12	6
Anapaest	42	30	25	15	21	45	33	30	24	48	27	88
Daetyl	2	2	1	0	1	3	3	1	1	2	1	2

\* I have left blanks where I thought it was unimportant to ascertain the numbers.

† Two of which are double, having two superfluous syllables.

Though the preceding table shows that the poets are far from practising a monotonous uniformity, yet I think we may gather from it that Tennyson and Browning are not more observant of the *a-priori* laws of the metrists than Milton is. They have on the whole more lines with final, but without internal pause; somewhat fewer with internal, but without final pause; about the same without any pause at all. As to the forbidden internal pauses, they use the pause after the 1st, 3rd, and 9th syllables more frequently than Milton, and do not differ much from him in their use of the pause after 1½, 2, 8. With regard to the middle pauses, those which divide the feet, coming after the 5th or 7th syllable, are more favoured by the moderns than by Milton, whose commonest pause is after the 6th syllable, and then *longo intervallo* after the 4th. In *Oenone* the pause after the 5th syllable prevails, but taking all the passages together the pause after the 4th seems to be Tennyson's favourite, while Browning seems to prefer the 5th and 7th. This last also abounds in Swinburne. In his *Erechtheus* it comes twice as often as any other pause. Feminine ending is very rare in Browning, but in Tennyson is hardly less frequent than in Milton. Nor is there any marked difference as regards substitution of feet, except that the non-initial trochee is more common in Milton than in the others. In two passages of Tennyson the anapaest is found more often than in Milton; in one passage of Browning it occurs more than twice as often.

My reason for selecting Tennyson and Browning as representatives of Modern English verse is not merely that they stand highest in general estimation at the present time, but that they are so sharply contrasted, the one naturally inclining to a strong and masculine realism, apparently careless of sound, and only too happy to startle and shock and puzzle his readers; the other richly ornate, with an almost feminine refinement, and a natural delight in 'linked sweetness long drawn out,' 'deep-chested music, hollow oes and aes,' such as we find in the *Morte d'Arthur* and *Oenone*. It is thus a matter of great interest to observe the different ways in which novelty of rhythm is sought after by each. One which seems to be

peculiarly Tennysonian is the opposition of the metrical to the verbal division, by which I mean making the words end in the middle of the feet, as in

With ro|sy slen|der fin|gers back|ward drew |.

We might describe this as trochaic or feminine rhythm in opposition to the markedly iambic or masculine rhythm of

Puts forth | an arm | and creeps | from pine | to pine |.

Other variations from the normal line will be seen in the lines cited below. It will be noticed that examples of the double trochee, which was condemned as a monstrosity in Milton, are to be found occasionally even in Tennyson and are common enough in Browning.

*Gareth.* His horse | thereon | stumbled | ay, for | I saw | it.  
 0 1 0 1 2 0 1 0 0 1  
 What! shall | the shield | of Mark | stand a|mong these?  
 2 0 0 1 0 2 2 0 0 2  
 —stood

Beauti|ful a|mong lights, | and wa|ving to | him  
 2 0 0 0 0 1 0 1 0 1

White hands and courtesy—

*Arden.* The lit|tle in|nocent soul | fitted | away. |  
 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1  
 Down at | the far | end of | an av|enue, |  
 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 1  
 Just where | the prone | edge of | the wood | began. |  
 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 1  
 Take your | own time, | Annie, | take your | own time. |  
 1 0 2 1 1 0 1 0 2 1

(a line which, according to my reading, is made up of five trochees.)

‘Then for | God’s sake’, | he ans|wered, ‘both | our sakes’.  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 2 0 1

He, not | for his | own self | caring, | but her |  
 1 1 0 1 2 1 2 0 0 2

*Balin.* I thought | the great | tower would | crash down | on both  
 0 1 0 1 2 0 1 1 0 1

*Princess.* Strove to | buffet | to land | in vain. | A tree |.  
 1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1

Palpi|tated, | her hand | shook, and | we heard |.  
 2 0 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1

Down the | low tur|ret stairs, | palpi|tating |  
 1 0 1 2 0 1 2 0 1 0

(The expressive rhythm of the last line is destroyed by the scansion suggested in *English Lessons* § 138

Down the | low tur|ret sta|irs pal|pita|ting.)

*Balin.* Rolling | back up|on Bal|in crushed | the man |.  
 1 0 1. 0 0 1 0 2 0 1

## , Examples of trisyllabic substitution.

- Gareth.* Camelot, | a city of shad|ow|y pal|l|aces. |  
 2 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 1  
 Southward | they set | their fal|ces. The | birds made |  
 2 0 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 2 1  
 Melody | on branch | and mel|ody in | mid air. |  
 2 0 0 0 1 0 2 0 0 0 1 1
- Princess.* Myriads | of riv|ulets hur|rying thro' | the lawn. |  
 2 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 1  
 Fluctua|ted as flow|ers in storm, | some red | some pale |  
 2 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 1 2 1 2
- Harold.* Sanguelac, | Sanguelac, | the ar|row, the ar|row! away! |  
 2 0 0 0 2 0 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0
- Gareth.* And there | were none | but few | goodlier | than he. |  
 0 0 0 1 0 1 2 0 0 0 1
- Oenoe.* And lis|tened, the | full-flow|ing riv|er of speech. |  
 0 1 0 0 1 0 2 0 0 1 1  
 Rests like | a shad|ow, and | the cica|la sleeps. |  
 2 0 0 1 0 0 0 0 1 0 1
- Gareth.* The hoof | of his horse | slipt in | the stream, | the stream |  
 0 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 1  
 Descended—
- Arden.* Then, after a | long tum|ble about | the Cape |  
 1 1 0 0 1 2 0 0 1 0 1
- Harold v. 2.* —We should have a hand  
 To grasp | the world | with, and | a foot | to stamp | it  
 Flat. Praise | the Saints. | It is o|ver. No | more blood. |  
 2 1 0 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 1
- Gareth.* Bearing | all down | in thy | precip|itancy. |  
 1 0 1 1 0 0 0 1 0 0 1  
 A yet | warm corpse | and yet | unbur|iable. |  
 0 1 1 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1  
 For thou | hast ev|er ans|wored cour|teously. |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1  
 Imming|led with | heaven's az|ure wa|veringly |  
 0 1 0 0 1 1 0 1 0 0 1
- Guinevere.* To whom | the lit|tle nov|ice gar|rulously |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1

(Tennyson has a peculiar affection for a final anapaest forming part of a word of four or more syllables.)

- Gareth.* How he | went down, | said Ga|reth, as | a false knight |  
 2 0 1 2 0 1 0 1 0 1 2

(If this is the proper scansion, it is a remarkable instance of an anapaest in iambic metre with an accent on the 2nd syllable. In anapaestic metre the accent is often overridden. See p. 117.)

At times | the sum|mit of | the high city flashed |  
 0 1 0 1 0 0 0 0 1 0 2

In the lines which follow I think it must be admitted that the trisyllabic feet are more naturally described as tribrachs than as anapaests.

*Gareth.* Para|bles ! Hear | a par|able of | the knave. |  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 0 0 1  
 Down the | long av|enues of | a bound|less wood |  
 1 0 1 1 0 0 0 0 1 0 1  
 Of thine | obe|dience and | thy love | to me |  
 0 1 0 1 0 0 0 0 1 0 1  
 Thou art | the king|liest of | all kit|chen-knaves |  
 1 0 0 1 0 0 0 1 1 0 1  
*Oenone.* And shoul|der ; from | the vi|olet her | light foot |  
 0 1 0 1 0 0 0 1 1 1

The feminine ending very often consists of a monosyllable

*Gareth.* But where|fore would | ye men | should won|der at | you  
*Oenone.* Crouch'd faw|ning in | the weed. | Most lov|ing is | she?

sometimes it is a tetrasyllable as

Have all | his pret|ty young | ones ed|uca|ted.  
 In sai|lor fash|ion rough|ly ser|moni|zing.

It is rare to have two superfluous syllables at the end of the line, as

*Princess.* And lit|tle-foot|ed Chi|na, touch|ed | on Ma|homet.  
 But love | and na|ture, these | are two | more ter|rible.

We find an Alexandrine in *Harold*

From child | to child, | from Pope | to Pope, | from age | to age. |

It has been mentioned that modern poets are fond of placing the pause after the uneven syllables. When the preceding syllable is accented, this very much changes the character of the metre, and in Mr and Mrs Browning has the effect at times of a sharp discord, not always resolved by the succeeding harmony. I give here specimens from Tennyson, italicizing the irregular accent.

*Princess.* Till the | sun drop | *dead*, from | the signs. Her voice |  
 0 0 2 1 2 0 0 1 0 1  
 Choked, and | her fore|head sank | upon | her hands. |  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1  
 Blackened | about | us, bats | *wheeled*, and | owls whooped.  
 2 0 0 1 0 2 1 0 2 1  
*Gareth.* The La|dy of | the Lake | *stood*: all | her dress |  
 0 1 0 0 0 1 2 1 0 1

Wept from | her sides, | as wa|ter flow|ing away. |  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1  
 A star | shot: 'Lo' |, said Ga|reth, 'the | foe falls'. |  
 0 1 2 1 0 1 0 0 2 1  
 An owl | whoopt: 'Hark | the vic|tor pea|ling there.' |  
 0 1 2 1 0 1 0 1 0 1  
*Guinevere.* Chung to | the dead | earth, and | the land | was still. |  
 2 0 0 2 1 0 0 1 0 1

One reason for the irregularity shown in the lines I have quoted, is doubtless the simple love of novelty and variety; but no attentive reader can have failed to observe that in most instances there is a special appropriateness of the rhythm to the thought, and that the expressiveness of the rhythm is often much assisted by the selection of vowel and consonant sounds, as in

*Princess.* —the river sloped  
 To plunge | in cat|aract shat|tering on | black blocks |  
 0 2 0 2 0 0 2 0 0 0 2 2  
 A breadth of thunder—  
*Morte d'Arthur.* Dry clashed | his har|ness in | the icy caves |  
 And bar|ren chas|ms, and all | to left | and right |  
 The bare | black cliff | clanged round | him, as | he based  
 His feet | on juts | of slip|pery crag, | that rang |  
 Sharp-smit|ten with | the dint | of arm|ed heels: |  
 And on | a sud|den, lo! | the lev|el lake, |  
 And the | long glo|ries of | the win|ter moon. |  
*Gareth.* Her hand | dwelt ling|ering|ly on | the latch. |  
 0 1 1 2 0 1 0 0 0 1  
 Linger | with vac|illa|ting obe|dience |  
 2 0 0 2 0 1 0 0 1 0 1  
*Princess.* —the drum  
 Beat; mer|rily blow|ing shrilled | the mar|tial fife, |  
 2 1 0 0 1 0 2 0 1 0 0 1  
 And, in | the blast | and bray | of the | long horn |  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 1  
 And ser|pent-throa|ted bug|le, un|dula|ted  
 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 2 0 1  
 The banner—  
 —as when a boat  
 Tacks, and | the slack|ened sail | flaps, all | her voice |  
 2 0 0 1 0 1 2 1 0 1  
 Faltering | and flut|tering in | her throat, | she cried  
 1 0 0 1 0 0 0 1 0 1  
 My brother—

Sometimes the effect of the line, as read, though not the metre itself, might be more exactly given by employing the classical terms for compound metres. Thus



*Guinevere.* Ready | to spring; | waiting | a chance: | for this |  
 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 1

might be described as made up of two choriamb and an iamb  
 (— — — | — — — | — —).

*Arden.* The dead | weight of | the dead | leaf bore | it down |  
 0 1 2 0 0 1 1 2 0 1

bacchius, ionic a minore, cretic (— — — | — — — | — —).

Then down | the long | street hav|ing slow|ly sto|len  
 1 1 0 1 1 1 0 1 0 1

spondee, bacchius, three trochees (— — | — — | — — | — — | — —).

And glori|es of | the broad | belt of | the world |  
 0 1 0 0 0 1 2 0 0 1

amphibrach, ionic a minore, anapaest (— — — | — — — | — — —).

*Oenone.* A fire | dances | before | her, and | a sound |  
 0 2 1 0 0 1 0 0 0 1

iamb, trochee, amphibrach, anapaest (— — | — — | — — | — — —).

The only other point which needs illustration is the un-  
 stopped line, of which the following may be taken as examples.

*Guinevere.* And saw the queen who sat between her best  
 Enid, and lissoine Vivien, of her court  
 The wildest—

*Gareth.* —what stick ye round  
 The pasty?

*Sisters.* —I heard  
 Wheels, and a noise of welcome at the doors.

I proceed to give examples of similar irregularities from  
 Browning.

*Ring and Book.*

iv. 180. Tracked her | home to | her house-|top, no|ted too |  
 1 0 1 0 0 0 1 0 1 0

iv. 830. Help a | case the | Archbish|op would | not help |  
 2 0 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 1

868. Bless the | fools! and | 'tis just | this way | they are blessed |  
 2 0 2 0 1 0 1 1 0 1

vi. 942. God and | man, and | what du|ty I | owe both |  
 2 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 1 2

vi. 1048. Hating | lies, let | not her | believe | a lie |  
 2 0 2 1 0 1 0 2 0 1

vi. 1443. Matu|tinal, | busy | with book | so soon |  
 1 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0 1

vi. 1603. Leap to | life of | the pale | elec|tric sword |  
 2 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1

- VI. 1643. Noted | down in | the book | there, turn | and see |  
 1 0 1 0 0 1 1 2 0 1
- VI. 1915. One by | one at | all hon|est forms | of life |  
 2 0 2 0 1 0 0 1 0 1
- VI. 1952. Foes or | friends, but | indis|solubly bound |  
 2 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 2078. She and | I are | mere stran|gers now : | but priests |  
 2 0 2 0 0 2 0 1 0 1  
 Should study passion—
- IV. 36. One calls | the square | round, t'oth'er the | round square  
 1 1 0 2 2 1 0 0 2 2
- IV. 303. It all | comes of | God giv'ing her | a child |  
 0 1 1 0 1 0 1 1 0 0 1
- IV. 307. Why, thou | exact | prince, is | it a pearl | or no ? |  
 1 0 0 1 1 1 0 0 1 0 1
- IV. 869. And the | world wags | still, be|cause fools | are sure |  
 0 0 2 1 1 0 0 1 2 0 1
- VI. 917. Would that | prove the | first ly|ing tale | was true ? |  
 0 1 2 0 1 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 1319. That I | liked, that | was the | best thing | she said |  
 2 0 2 2 0 0 1 1 1 1
- VI. 1642. I heard | charge, and | bore ques|tion and | told tale |  
 0 1 2 0 1 1 0 0 0 1 1
- VI. 1876. And silk | mask in | the pock|et of | the gown |  
 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 0 1
- IV. 880. With that | fine can|dour only forth|coming |  
 0 1 2 2 0 1 0 1 0 0
- VI. 820. And the way | to end | dreams is | to break | them, stand, |  
 0 0 1 0 2 1 0 0 1 0 2  
 Walk, go : | then help | me to | stand, walk | and go. |  
 2 2 1 2 0 0 2 1 0 1
- VI. 1244. —Much more if stranger men  
 Laugh or | frown,—just | as that | were much | to bear |  
 1 0 1 0 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 1859. —I saved his wife  
 Against | law : a|gainst law | he slays | her now |  
 0 1 2 0 1 2 1 1 0 1
- VI. 427. Hallo, | there's Gui|do, the | black, mean, | and small |  
 0 0 1 1 0 1
- VI. 481. —'Lent  
 Ended,' | I told | friends 'I | shall go | to Rome' |  
 1 0 0 1 1 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 5. And know | it again. | Answer | you ? Then | that means .  
 0 1 0 0 1 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 8. Fronting | you same | three in | this ver'y room |  
 1 0 1 1 0 1 1 0 1
- VI. 12. Laughter, | no lev|ity, noth'ing indec|orous, lords |  
 1 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1
- (We have the same pronunciation of 'indecorous' in

*Arist.* 135. More de|cent yet | indec|orous | enough | .)

- VI. 136. In good | part. Bet|ter late | than nev|er, law ! |  
 0 1 1 0 1 0 1 0 1
- VI. 185. In the | way he | called love. | He is the | fool there |  
 1 0 0 2 1 2 2 0 0 2 1

- vi. 223. Oldest | now, great|est once, | in my | birth-town |  
 2 0 1 2 0 1 0 0 2 1  
 Are|zo, I rec|ognize | no e|qual there. |  
 0 1 0 0 1
- vi. 383. Heads that | wag, eyes | that twink|le mod|ified mirth |  
 1 0 1 0 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 1
- vi. 92. I held | so; you | deci|ded oth|erwise, |  
 Saw no | such per|il, there|fore no | such need |  
 To stop | song, loos|en flower | and leave | path: Law, |  
 0 1 1 1 0 1 0 1 1 2  
 Law was | aware | and watch|ing—
- vi. 1786. For a wink | of the owl|eyes of | you. How | miss then |  
 0 0 1 0 0 1 1 1 0 1 2 0
- vi. 1800. I' the quag|mire of | his own | tricks, cheats, | and lies |  
 0 0 1 0 0 0 1 2 1 0 1
- vi. 120. Do I speak | ambig|uously? | the glo|ry, I say, |  
 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0 2 0 0 1  
 And the beau|ty, I say, | and splen|dour, still | say I, |  
 0 0 2 0 0 1 0 2 0 1 0 1  
 Who, a | priest, trained | to live | my whole | life long |  
 1 0 2 1 0 1 0 1 1 1  
 On beau|ty and splen|dour, sole|ly at | their source, |  
 God—have | thus recognized my food—  
 2 0 1 1

Sometimes the effect to the ear might be indicated, as before, by a reference to the more complex classical measures, e.g.

- iv. 216. Lies to | God, lies | to man, | every | way lies |  
 2 0 1 2 0 1 1 0 0 2

cretic, cretic, dactyl, long syllable. (— — | — — | — — | —).

- vi. 1783. You blind | guides, who | must needs | lead eyes | that see |  
 0 1 1 0 0 1 1 1 0 1

bacchius, ionic a minore, cretic (— — | — — | — —).

- vi. 1083. —Some paces thence  
 An inn | stands; cross | to it; | I shall | be there |  
 0 1 1 1 0 0 1 0 0 1

bacchius, dactyl, choriamb (— — | — — | — —).

The extreme harshness of many of these lines is almost a match for anything in Surrey, only what in Surrey is helplessness seems the perversity of strength in Browning. The nearest approach to it in any modern verse is, I think, to be found in *Aurora Leigh*. The quotations are from the 2nd edition, 1857.

- p. 16. Partic|ular worth | and gen|eral miss|ionariness |  
 0 1 0 0 1 0 1 0 0 1 0 0 1

(The 3rd syllable in the last word is slurred.)

- p. 25. As a | soul from | the bod|y, out | of doors |  
<sub>1 0 2 0 0 1 0 1 0 1</sub>
- p. 27. You clap | hands—'a | fair day'— | you cheer | him on  
<sub>1 2 1 0 2 1 0 1 0 1</sub>
- p. 29. —mount  
 Step by | step. Sight | goes fast|er; that | still ray |  
<sub>1 0 1 2 0 1 0 1 1 1</sub>  
 Goes straight—

But though the Aristophanic vein in Browning is continually leading him to trample under foot the dignity of verse and to shock the uninitiated reader by colloquial familiarities, "thumps upon the back," such as the poet Cowper resented; yet no one can be more impressive than he is when he surrenders himself to the pure spirit of poetry, and flows onwards in a stream of glorious music, such as that in which Balaustion pictures Athens overwhelmed by an advance of the sea (*Aristophanes' Apology*, p. 2).

What if thy watery plural vastitude,  
 Rolling unanimous advance, had rushed,  
 Might upon might, a moment,—stood, one stare,  
 Sea-face to city-face, thy glaucous wave  
 Glassing that marbled last magnificence,—  
 Till fate's pale tremulous foam-flower tipped the grey,  
 And when wave broke and overswarmed and, sucked  
 To bounds back, multitudinously ceased,  
 And land again breathed unconfused with sea,  
 Attiké was, Athenai was not now!

And a little below on the hope of immortality:

- Why should despair be? Since, distinct above  
 Man's wickedness and folly, flies the wind  
 And floats the cloud, free transport for our soul  
 Out of its fleshly durance dim and low,—  
 • Since disembodied soul anticipates  
 (Thought-borne as now, in rapturous unrestraint)  
 Above all crowding, crystal silentness,  
 Above all noise, a silver solitude:—  
 \* \* \* \*  
 O nothing doubt, Philemon! Greed and strife,  
 Hatred and cark and care, what place have they  
 In yon blue liberality of heaven?

I hardly know whether it is fancy or not, but to me there is no poetry which has such an instantaneous solemnizing power as that of Browning. We seem to be in the company of some rough rollicking Silenus, and all of a sudden the spirit descends upon him, the tone of his voice changes, and he pours out strains of sublimest prophecy. To use his own figure, a sudden breeze disperses the smoky haze of the crowded city, and in a moment we are conscious of the 'crystal silentness' of snow-crowned Alps towering over our heads. I will close with the concluding lines of a poem which has always seemed to me to have this effect in a remarkable degree, *The strange experience of Karshish, the Arab physician*.

The very God ! think Abib ; dost thou think ?  
So the All-great were the All-loving too,  
So, through the thunder, comes a human voice  
Saying, 'O heart I made, a heart beats here :  
Face, My hands fashioned, see it in Myself.  
Thou hast no power, nor may'st conceive of Mine ;  
But love I gave thee, with Myself to love,  
And thou must love Me, who have died for thee.'

## POSTSCRIPT.

### *Zarncke on the 5-foot iambic in German poetry.*

I HOPED to have been able to add something on modern trisyllabic metre, the English hexameter, Tennyson's use of the metre of *In Memoriam* and other topics, but want of leisure compels me to stop here. Perhaps I have done enough for my immediate purpose, which was to point out defects in our present metrical systems and to give illustrations of what seemed to me a truer and more natural system, not of course to attempt to exhaust an inexhaustible subject. It may however be of interest to some of my readers if I insert here a short abstract of Zarncke's tract on the five-foot iambic, referred to by Prof. Paul Meyer (p. 48 above). The essay is now out of print, and, as far as I know, the copy which has come into my hands, since the preceding chapters were written, is the only one to be seen in England. At any rate it is not in the British Museum or in the Cambridge University Library. It is of importance as giving the views of one of the most competent of German metrists on the origin of the heroic line, together with a specimen of his metrical analysis as applied to the poetry of Lessing and Schiller. The German title adds *und Goethe*, but the metre of the last is only just touched on in the concluding pages (88—93).

Zarncke begins by lamenting the indifference shown by German scholars in regard to the metres employed by their greatest poets. Germans have done much to illustrate the metres of the ancients, but Koberstein, he says, is almost the only historian of literature, who has paid any attention to their

own verse. To judge aright of the blank verse of Lessing, Schiller and Goethe we must have some knowledge of the previous history of the 5-foot iambic. The earliest specimen of this is a Provençal poem on Boethius belonging to the 1st half of the 10th century. We have no ground for tracing the metre back either to the Greek 5-foot iambic or 5-foot trochaic with anacrusis, nor to the Latin hendecasyllabic, which is quite opposed to it in rhythm. We can say no more of it than that it was in all probability the ordinary metre of the Romance epic and spread from France into other countries<sup>1</sup>. The best account of it is that by Diez in his *Altrom. Sprachdenkmalen*, Bonn 1846. The oldest form has always the masculine ending, the caesura after the 2nd foot, and a decided pause both at the caesura and at the end of the line. Very frequently the caesura is feminine (i.e. the 1st section ends with a superfluous syllable) and the initial unaccented syllable of the 2nd section is omitted.

Thus we obtain the following scheme  $\cup - \cup - (\cup) || (\cup) - \cup - \cup -$  giving rise to four different kinds of verse, according as the caesura is masculine or feminine, and the 2nd section complete or truncated<sup>2</sup>.

Enfánts | en dícs || forén | omé | felló |  
 Qu'el é|ra cóms || ^ mólt | onráz | e ríx |  
 Nos jó|ve óm|ne || quandiús | que nós | están |  
 Donz fó | Boé|eis || ^ córps | ag bó | e pró |

In the *Alexius* and *Song of Roland*, dating from the 11th century, we meet with examples of feminine ending, as

Faités | la guér|re || cum vós | l'avéz | empr|se

though this is rarely found in conjunction with feminine caesura or sectional truncation, sufficient variety being produced by the superfluous syllable at the end.

In other poems of the same date we find the caesura, masculine and feminine, after the 3rd foot. From about the middle of the 12th century, the 5-foot verse gave place to the 4-foot and 6-foot (Alexandrine), but was still retained for lyric poetry, undergoing however two changes: (1) the caesura, which

<sup>1</sup> See however my preface, p. viii.

<sup>2</sup> For the sake of brevity I have used here my own symbols and terminology.

occurs regularly after the 4th syllable, was treated simply as a metrical, not a logical pause, (2) the preceding accent was often thrown back or inverted, making the 2nd foot a trochee, as

Bona | dómna || per cui | planc e | sospir |

Diez calls this the 'lyrical' caesura, in contrast to the earlier 'epic' caesura.

Later on, all the accents, except the last, became liable to inversion, as

Bélha | dómna || válham | vóstra | valórs |

thus giving the following scheme

◡ - | ◡ - || ◡ - | ◡ - | ◡ - | ◡  
 - ◡ | - ◡ || - ◡ | - ◡ | - ◡ |

From 1500 the feminine caesura disappears altogether owing to the growing weakness of the final *e*. The more regular form of the 5-foot iambic became known as the *vers commun* and was employed by Ronsard for epic and by Jodelle for tragedy. By the end of the 16th century, however, there was a reaction in favour of the Alexandrine, the stiff monotony of the rhyming 5-foot with its fixed pauses after the 4th and 10th syllables being felt to be unsuitable for the more animated styles of poetry<sup>1</sup>.

The Italian hendecasyllabic metre had been developed out of the Provençal lyric poetry long before it was made famous by Dante. It differs from the French in the constant feminine ending (*a*), the freedom of the caesura which may be either masculine or feminine, and either after the 2nd or 3rd foot (*b*), the use of *enjambement*, i.e. the absence of a final pause, so as to allow one verse to run on into another (*c*), the transposition of the accent in any foot except the last, but especially in the 4th foot (*d*), as

Le Don|ne i | Cavalier || l' árme | gli amo|re

This freedom of rhythm is accompanied by greater freedom in the rhyme, so as to connect together not merely two consecutive lines but whole stanzas.

<sup>1</sup> See Ebert *Entwicklungsgeschichte der französischen Tragödie*, Gotha 1856.



In England the 5-foot iambic has played a more important part than in any other country. Introduced probably by Chaucer from France at the beginning of the 15th century, by the middle of the 16th it succeeded in throwing off the fetters of rhyme, and became the blank verse of the English drama and epic. The use of the feminine ending and of transposition of accent was however more restricted than in Italy.

In Germany we find examples of the 5-foot iambic closing a four-foot stanza as early as the 12th century<sup>1</sup>. It was probably borrowed from the Provençal, but is much freer as to the use of the caesura, which sometimes disappears altogether. This freedom continued in spite of the growing influence of French poetry during the 16th century, till Martin Opitz (d. 1639) laid down the law that there must always be a caesura after the 4th syllable. Gottsched, writing in 1737, is very severe on those who break this law, and 'place the caesura anywhere or no where', probably said in reference to such poems as Bodmer's translations from Thomson. The Anglicized form however continued to grow in popularity; thus J. H. Schlegel (1757) announces his intention to adopt the licenses allowed in English, and while distinguishing three caesuras (after the 4th, 5th and 6th syllables) says it is not necessary for every line to have the caesura. Wieland (1762) was the first to substitute anapaests and trochees for the iamb. Klopstock in the preface to his *Salomo* says he has interspersed 6-foot and hendecasyllabic lines among the regular 5-foot, that he substitutes anapaest for iamb wherever he finds it convenient, and that he often ends a line with an ionic, 3rd paeon or pyrrhic. Herder wrote in favour of the use of the English metre for the drama in 1768, and Lessing employed it in his *Nathan* in 1778. He intersperses freely 6-foot and 4-foot lines, makes the superfluous syllable of the 'feminine ending' equal in weight to the preceding accented syllable, elides short final *e* before a vowel or *h*, sometimes before a consonant as *ohn' dieses, nehm' sich*, and even at the end of the line, as *und bring' | Ihn her*. More important are the changes he introduced in regard to the length of his periods and the use of the caesura. At first, as still in France,

<sup>1</sup> See Lachmann's Preface to his edition of *Wolfram*, p. xxviii.

each 5-foot line was complete in itself, but the Italians and still more the English had led the way in connecting lines by *enjambement* and building them up into long periods. In *Nathan* we meet with periods extending over as many as 27 lines. These are artfully combined with shorter periods, and the verses are marked by the antagonism between the sense (logic) and metre, and by the boldness of the *enjambement*. Thus the end of the line comes between subject and predicate, as in *Babylon* | *Ist von Jerusalem*—sagt | *Der Patriarch*; between adjective or article and noun, as *die strengsten* | *Entschlüsse*—mein | *Gewissen*—der | *Bescheidne Ritter*—ich im | *Begriff war*; between preposition and noun, as *durch* | *Das Feuer*—von | *Euch*; and other closely related words as, *Pilger zu* | *Geleiten*—so | *Unendlich viel*—zu stürmen und | *Zu schirmen*—er wandelt wieder auf | *Und ab*—ganz | *Gewiss*—will | *Ihm danken*—sagt wie | *Gefüllt euch*. Besides this, Lessing takes pains to break the rhythm of the individual line by a pause shortly after the beginning or before the end, as

— wie? weil

Es ganz natürlich; ganz alltäglich klänge.

— Ist

Ein alter Eindruck ein verlornen? Wirkt

Das Nehmliche nicht mehr das Nehmliche?

Um lieber etwas noch unglaublichers

Zu glauben—

Sometimes the latter section of a preceding line joins with the earlier section of the following line to make a perfect 5-foot, as

—Dass doch

Die Einfalt immer Recht behält! Ihr dürft

Mir doch auch wohl vertrauen—

The line is also frequently broken by being divided between different persons. It is only at the end of the period that the antagonism of logic and metre is reconciled.

The caesura is needed to give variety to a line which is complete in itself, but may be dispensed with in a line so much varied as Lessing's. We are not therefore surprised to meet with lines of his, which have no caesura or pause of any kind.

Schiller at first wrote his plays in prose, but in 1786 began to employ the 5-foot iambic as modified by Lessing, thus

Ich drück' an meine Seele dich. Ich fühle  
Die deinige allmächtig an mir schlagen.  
O jetzt ist alles wieder gut. In dieser  
Umarmung ist mein krankes Herz genesen.

He often uses 4-foot and 6-foot lines and occasionally 7-foot. He is even bolder than Lessing in his use of the monosyllable in feminine ending, as *Freund mehr, warum nicht*. Elision is rare, except where a monosyllabic pronoun follows the verb, when it occurs even at the end of a line, as *was wollt' | Ich denn*. In length of period and *enjambement* he follows Lessing. 'As examples of the latter we may take *du bist | Gerettet—ich | Ver-  
gesse—er | Verachtet es—mein ganzes | Verdienst—im linken  
Flugel des | Palastes*. He neglects the caesura and divides the line between different speakers. In *Wallenstein* (1798) we find further freedom in the length of the line, varying from 7-foot to 1-foot, and in the use of anapaests and trochees, the former in all the feet but especially in the last, the latter only in the 1st foot. Slurring is also employed. As examples of harshness in the use of feminine ending and of *enjambement* may be cited *vorn Feind liegt—zu mir drang—Kein Wort mehr—; es war  
der drei | Und zwanzigste des Mai's—wenn der Nachtschiff auf-  
gesetzt—eh' die Glücks—Gestalt mir wieder wegfieht*. The lines however preserve their individuality better than in Lessing, and are less often divided between different speakers.

In *Marie Stuart* and *Jungfrau von Orleans* anapaestic substitution is very frequent, but *enjambement* and feminine ending are less used; rhyme is more common, the verbal and metrical accents are often opposed. In Schiller's two last dramas *Braut von Messina* and *Wilhelm Tell* the characteristic feature is the extended use of the trochee, not merely at the beginning but in the middle of the line, as

Und du | bist falsch | wie sie! | zwingt | mich nicht | .

The duke Carl August complains of this license in a letter to Goethe. In other respects however these latest plays are more regular than the earlier.

# INDEX.

Abbott, Dr 34 foll., cited 8, 25, 27, 28, 32, 96, 99—110, 146, 150, 151, 152, 158—166, 171, 175, 177, 184, 188.  
 accent 30, 49, 56, 74, 75; verbal, metrical, emphatic 35 foll.; in the verse of the ancients *Pref.* p. vii.; in Romance p. 198; defect of accent, see *Pyrrhic*; excess, see *Spondee*; inversion, see *Trochee*.  
*adeste fideles* 133.  
 aesthetic view of metre 3, 49 foll.  
 alcaic 117, 119, 122, 123.  
 Alexandrine, mistaken 27; in Shakespeare 44, 161, 167, 180; divided between speakers 161, with feminine caesura 163; in Tennyson 190; in French 198, 199; German 200—202.  
 amphibious section, see 'common'.  
 amphibrach, is it used in English verse? 94 foll., may it be substituted for an iamb? 43, 45, 74 foll.; rhythmical not metrical 192.  
 anacrusis 8, 91 foll. 104, 105, 129, 134.  
 analysis, metrical, its use 2, elaborate of Mr A. J. Ellis 61.  
 anapaest 4, 32, 87, 88, 89, 93, 94, 109 foll. 129 foll.; for iamb 22, 43, 44, 54, 67, 73, 75 foll. 107, 125, 127, 128, 137, 138, 143, 161, 169, 179, 185 foll., in German poetry 200, 202; anapaestic or dactylic? 116. See *Metre*.  
 antibacchius 75.  
 antispastus, rhythmical 172.  
 appoggiatura in Milton 23, 53.  
 a-priorism, antiquarian 12 foll., logical 34 foll.  
 Arnold, M. cited 88.  
 bacchius, rhythmical 191, 194.  
 Bain 94.

blank verse, how varied 9, 49, 57 foll., see *Metamorphosis*; of Surrey 133 foll., of Marlowe 140 foll., of Shakespeare 146—183, of Tennyson and Browning 185—196, of Lessing and Schiller 200 foll.; history 197 foll., *Pref.* viii.  
 Browning, R. 94, 95, 185 foll.  
 Browning, Mrs 194.  
 Brydges on metre 54.  
 Burns cited 90, 150.  
 Byron cited 24, 60, 87.  
 caesura in old French 46 foll. 198 foll., in German 200—202; lyrical and epical 199. See *hemistich*.  
 Chaucer 12, 140, practises initial truncation 83, 138.  
 choriambus rhythmical 172, 191, 194.  
 classical terminology defended 5; used for rhythmical effects 191.  
 Coleridge 25, 86, 95.  
 Collins 84.  
 common section 146 foll., 166, 182.  
 Cowper 86.  
 cretic, is it used for iamb? 75; rhythmical 191, 194.  
 dactyl, for iamb 44, 73, 74, 78, 81, 109, 127, 144, 179, 180, 185, 186, 188, 189; for trochee 105; dactylic metre in Tennyson 117, in *Hymnbook* 129. See *Metre*.  
 Dante 80, 199.  
 defective, distinguished from fragmentary lines 149 foll., 182, 183.  
 Diez 198, 199.  
 disyllabization of monosyllables, legitimate and illegitimate 36 foll., 44, 143, 150 foll., 183.  
 Dryden 17, 19.

- elision 22, 76, 170; wrongly marked in editions of Shakespeare 155 foll.
- Ellis, A. J., objects to classical terminology and routine scansion 5, 7; does not admit feminine caesura 21, 168, 169, 170, 178; his metrical system 57 foll., illustrated in original examples 63; criticized 69 foll., 178; on *Macbeth* 165 foll.
- ending, unstopped (*enjambement*) 14, in Surrey 138, in Tennyson 192, in Italian and German 199 foll. See *feminine*.
- Evans, R. W. cited 70.
- extra-metrical syllable only found at the end of the line or the caesura 41, 42, 80; at the end often a monosyllable, in Shakespeare 177, in Tennyson 190, in German 202. See *feminine* and *hemistich*.
- feminine ending 8, 82; in Surrey 139, Marlowe 143, Shakespeare 169, 174 foll., in Romance and German poetry 198 foll.; double 143, 178, 190. See *hemistich*.
- Fleay on Shakespeare's use of the feminine ending 175.
- Fletcher 31, 175.
- foot, the basis of metre 6, 34.
- force, metrical 61.
- fragmentary lines in Surrey 139, in Shakespeare 147 foll., 166, 183.
- French, old decasyllabic metre 46 foll., 197 foll.
- Gascoigne 140.
- Guest, Dr 3, 12 foll., his calculation of the possible varieties of the heroic line 75; cited 138, 150, 178, 184.
- Hanmer, emendations of Shakespeare 180, 183.
- Heber 117.
- hemistich, extra syllable after (feminine caesura), admitted by Guest 21, Abbott 45, Keightley 80; denied by Ellis 21, 168; reasons in favour of 178, 179; exx. from *Macbeth* after 2nd foot 153, after 3rd foot 154; in Alexandrine 163; two extra syllables 179.
- hendecasyllable (trochaic) 122; (iambic) in Italian 199, in Latin *pref.* viii.
- Hood 88, 93, 117.
- hymn-book, metres classified pp. 124—134.
- hypermetrical 98, see *extra-metrical*.
- iamb for trochee 83, 106; for anapaest 110, 129, 130.
- iambic metre 4, how varied 9, 10, 63 foll., see *Blank verse*; subdivision of 106 foll., 125 foll.; passing into trochaic 91. See *Metre*.
- intuitivism 1—3, 49—56.
- Italian iambic 199, imitated by Milton 79.
- Johnson, Dr 28, 49, 50.
- Jonson, Ben 16, 30.
- Keats uses anacrusis in 4-foot trochaic 91.
- Keightley on Milton 79.
- Kingsley cited 89, 92.
- Klopstock 200.
- Lessing 200 foll.
- limitation of metrical substitution 70.
- Marlowe 10, 54, 84, 140—145.
- Masson on Milton 74 foll., his scansion questioned 76—79.
- measure (=foot) 7, common 14, triple 14.
- metamorphosis, metrical 81—98, 111, 116. See *Substitution*.
- metre, kinds of, classified 4, 8, 94—134, general view of irregularities 93; mixed 117—123, 130—134.
- Meyer, P. on old French metre 48.
- Milton, his metre condemned by Guest 14 foll.; he neglects final and middle pauses 15; does not use hypermetrical caesura 25; anapaestic lines in *Sams. Ag.* 32; his use of trochee for iamb 38—40; *Hymn on the Nativity* 85, 86; mixed trochaic and iambic 4-foot 91, 92; metrical analysis of 58, 67, 68, 184, 185; Masson and Keightley upon 76—79.
- modern blank verse 184—196.
- monosyllabic feet 109, erroneously admitted by Dr Guest 20, 24, 26, 29, and disyllabized by Dr Abbott 36 foll.; see *Truncation*.
- Morris, R. cited 83.
- Morris, W. uses the scazon 83.
- Munro *pref.*
- musical bars compared to metrical feet 53, 62.
- Nicol, H. on old French metre 46.
- normal line 9.

- Paris, G. on old French metre 40—48.  
 pause, final, middle and sectional 13  
 foll.; in Shakespeare 17, Swinburne  
 18; comparative view of pauses in  
 Milton, Pope, Tennyson, Browning  
 16, 185, 186; in Lessing and Schil-  
 ler 201; harsh in Surrey 138, Mar-  
 lowe 144, Tennyson 190, Browning  
 192.
- Pope neglects middle pause 17, uses  
 sectional pause 18, trisyllabic feet  
 23, 30, pyrrhic for iamb 31, admits  
 sequence iamb-trochee 29; contrasted  
 with Milton 19; emendations of  
 Shakespeare 180—183.
- pronunciation of proper names in  
 Marlowe and Shakespeare 111.
- prosody, use of 1, 3, 10, 50.
- pyrrhic for iamb 30, 31, 35, 59, 60, 68,  
 73, 75, 164, 172.
- reading of poetry not determined sole-  
 ly by scansion 10, 51 foll., 191 foll.
- Rush on accent 62.
- Ruskin cited 6.
- scansion, objected to 2, 50 foll.; rou-  
 tine 5; of Plautus 51; is only one  
 element in the reading of poetry 51;  
 question as to that of Dr Guest 22,  
 23, 26, 27, of Dr Abbott 36 foll., Mr  
 Symonds 54, 55, Mr Masson 76—79,  
 Mr Keightley 80.
- scazon used by W. Morris 83.
- Schiller 202.
- Schipper *Englische Metrik* 13, 84.
- Scott 84, 88, 90, 92, 93, 97.
- scriptorial disguise 93, 97.
- section of Anglo-Saxon inapplicable to  
 modern verse 7, 13 foll.; abrupt 20,  
 pausing 20; of eight-foot trochaic  
 103; see *Common, Pause, Hemistich*.
- Shakespeare, his pauses 15, 17; con-  
 traction of two syllables into one  
 22, 43; expansion of one into two  
 25, 37, 44, 150 foll.; use of spondee  
 for iamb 39; trisyllabic feet 42, 43,  
 161, 179; Alexandrines 44, 161, 167,  
 180; feminine caesura, see *Hemi-  
 stich*; first folio, elisions in 156;  
*Macbeth* 146—171, *Hamlet* 171—  
 183.
- Shelley cited 35, 83, 89, 91.
- Skeat (ed. of Guest) cited 12, 24, 26,  
 28; (of Chaucer) 83.
- slurring 41, 43, 44, 54, 55, 76, 77, 113,  
 114, 120, 155, 158—163, 170, *pref. v*.
- Southey *Lodore* 95, 96.
- spondee for iamb 28, 39, 72, 75, 110,  
 172.
- Steele on metre 62.
- Steevens 151, 180.
- substitution of one foot for another 70  
 —74. See *Metamorphosis*.
- Surrey 53, 135—140.
- Swinburne, heroic line containing four  
 anapaests 73; pause after 1st sylla-  
 ble 18, after 7th 187; truncated ana-  
 paests 87.
- symbols, metrical 97.
- Symonds 4, 49—56, 135.
- Tennyson, his metres classified 99—  
 123; fondness for trisyllabic metres  
 112; his blank verse analyzed 186—  
 192; compared with Browning 187;  
 uses dactyl, anapaest and tribrach  
 for iamb 44, 107, 108, 109, 118, 188  
 foll.; trochee for iamb 40, 109, 188;  
 example of iambic line made up of  
 5 trochees 188; monosyllabic feet,  
 initial in 4-foot iambic 84, 108, in  
 6-foot iambic 120, in anapaestic 111,  
 113; internal in anapaestic 115, in  
 trochaic 103, in iambic 120, 121;  
 final in trochaic 99 foll.; iamb for  
 trochee 83, 106; pauses 16, 186 foll.;  
 anacrusis 91; feminine ending 190;  
 feminine caesura in 6-foot anapaest  
 113; feminine rhythm 187; final  
 anapaest 189; *Arden* 186, *Balin* 186,  
*Boadicea* 121, *Canteretz* 104, *Gardi-  
 ner's D.* 17, 186, *Gareth* 186, *Harold*  
 189, *Lucknow* 116, *Lucretius* 186,  
*Maud* 114, *May Queen* 119, *Enone*  
 186, *Oldcastle* 186, *Princess* 188,  
*Revenge* 113, *Sea Fairies* 110, *Sisters*  
 186, *Victim* 116, 121, *Vision of Sin*  
 105, *Wellington* 104, 118.
- Thelwall 23.
- Todd 54.
- tribrach for iamb 74, 78, 189, *pref. v*.
- trisyllabic feet in iambic metre ques-  
 tioned by Guest 22, and Abbott 43,  
 defended by Skeats 24. See *Ana-  
 paest, Dactyl, Tribrach*.
- trochee 4; in 5-foot iambic, initial 26,  
 38, internal 38, 54, 63 foll. 172, 173,  
 final 32, 67, 71, 72, 83, 136, 137,  
 144, 164, 188, 190, 193, doubled in  
 Milton 24, 25, 38, 79, 80, Spenser  
 40, Tennyson 40, 188, Browning  
 192; limit of trochaic substitution  
 70 foll. cf. 188. Trochaic metres  
 99—106, 128, 129.
- Truncation 9; final of trochee 82, 99  
 foll., of dactyl 88, 117, 129; initial  
 of iamb in heroic 13 (Chaucer), 84,

- 140 foll. (Marlowe), in 4-foot 84, 85,  
108, 109, of anapaest 87, 110; inter-  
nal 89, 90. See *Monosyllabic*.  
Tyrwhitt 23.
- unstopped line, see *Ending*.
- variety, how obtained 9, 10, 59 foll.  
187. See *Metamorphosis*.
- Wagner 150.  
Walker 150.  
weight metrical 61, 70.  
Wolfe, *Burial of Sir J. Moore* 87.
- Zarncke on the origin of the 5-foot  
iambic 197 foll. *pref.* viii.

*WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.*

**M. TULLII CICERONIS DE NATURA DEORUM**  
Libri Tres, with Introduction and Commentary, together with  
a new collation of several of the English MSS. by J. H. SWAIN-  
SON, M.A.

Vol. I. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. Vol. II. 12s. 6d. Vol. III. 10s.

**A SKETCH OF ANCIENT PHILOSOPHY FROM**  
THALES TO CICERO. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.

**London: C. J. CLAY AND SONS,**  
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE,  
AVE MARIA LANE.

---

**GREEK FOR BEGINNERS.** Part I with Vocabulary.  
Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. Parts II and III with Vocabulary and  
Index. 3s. 6d. Complete. 4s. 6d.

**LONDON: MACMILLAN AND CO.**

---

**GUIDE TO THE USE OF CLASSICAL BOOKS.**  
3rd ed.

**LONDON: BELL AND SONS.**





